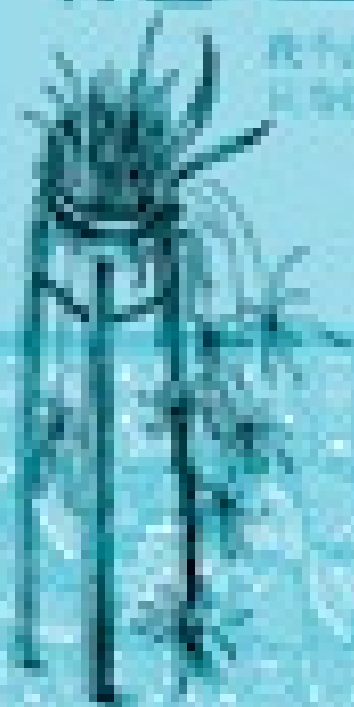


然后 爱情 随遇而安

——
写给迷茫的人从爱开始

作者：陈安妮

在千山万水的旅途中，
只与这一路相遇相知相爱



当未来还没有长出翅膀，
而你真的是想飞青葱——

你总想时光倒流回到那个青涩懵懂的年代

流光正是不留情的
绝版珍藏



然后 爱情 随遇而安

2012年最温暖
治愈人心的大长剧 卷

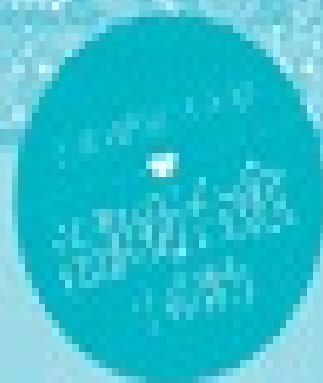
我不止万水千山而来，
只为这一抹随遇而安的爱



当大城繁华喧嚣渐歇，
当你我仍是陌路青葱——

它让时光温柔流淌，让爱悄然抵达你的彼岸

流光 让人不想错过的
绝版珍藏



Go With the Flow of Love

Table of Contents

- 1. [part 1](#)
- 2. [part 2](#)
- 3. [part 1](#)
- 4. [part 2](#)
- 5. [Chapter Three](#)
- 6. [part 1](#)
- 7. [part 2](#)
- 8. [part 1](#)
- 9. [part 2](#)
- 10. [part 1](#)
- 11. [part 2](#)
- 12. [Chapter Seven](#)
- 13. [part 1](#)
- 14. [part 2](#)
- 15. [part 1](#)
- 16. [part 2](#)
- 17. [Chapter Ten](#)
- 18. [part 1](#)
- 19. [part 2](#)
- 20. [Chapter Twelve](#)
- 21. [part 1](#)
- 22. [part 2](#)
- 23. [Chapter Fourteen](#)
- 24. [part 1](#)
- 25. [part 2](#)
- 26. [Chapter Sixteen](#)

- 27. [Chapter Seventeen](#)
- 28. [part 1](#)
- 29. [part 2](#)
- 30. [part 1](#)
- 31. [part 2](#)
- 32. [part 3](#)
- 33. [part 1](#)
- 34. [part 2](#)
- 35. [Chapter Twenty-One](#)
- 36. [part 1](#)
- 37. [part 2](#)
- 38. [part 3](#)
- 39. [part 1](#)
- 40. [part 2](#)
- 41. [Chapter Twenty-Four](#)
- 42. [part 1](#)
- 43. [part 2](#)

part 1

Go With The Flow Of Love by Big Grey Wolf With Wings

(NOTE: Chen Yu Bai and An Xiao Li's story only)

Synopsis: <http://www.books.shushengbar.com/?p=1072>

Review: <http://seoulinlovenow.blogspot.com.au/p/sungkyunkwan-scandal.html>

Male Lead: Chen Yu Bai

Female Lead: An Xiao Li

Chapter One (Part 1)

An Xiao Li slammed the brakes.

An Xiao Li took a closer look at the car she crashed into, it was fancy compared to her QQ car that was an old car. Her body tensed, she looked at the fancy sports car's driver and doom and gloom was written on her face.

After the collision An Xiao Li's old car and the sports car stopped close together. She saw the young man in the passenger seat clearly. What stood out was his expensive pair of glasses and the icy stare he gave her.

The cold air passed through An Xiao Li's car windshield and through her bones. Her whole body was frozen and her mouth chattered. Suddenly the sports car reversed, halted and the driver's door was opened.

The driver that stepped out of the sports car was another young man, it was hard to read his mood but compared to the other young man in the passenger seat the driver was less intimidating.

The driver opened An Xiao Li's car and bent his head. 'Miss are you ok?'

An Xiao Li's mouth was too numb and she couldn't open her mouth to answer the driver's question.

'Hello? Miss are you ok? Are you hurt anywhere?' the driver asked.

The driver creased his forehead then he leaned into An Xiao Li's car and

unbuckled her seatbelt.

An Xiao Li was in a daze but when she saw the driver wanted to lift her out of her car she snapped out of her daze. She decided to pretend she was still shock to let the driver carry her outside.

The sports car passenger seat opened at the same moment the driver unbuckled An Xiao Li's seatbelt. Suddenly the sky turned grey and the air temperature dropped below zero. An Xiao Li was having a beautiful daydream and she was the female lead in a romance novel waiting for her male lead to rescue her. Too bad her reality was a nightmare where the villain kidnapped the female lead. The driver who was gentle and about to lift her was pulled away from her car by the villainous young man in the glasses. The villain bent his head like a fallen ice glacier and gave her a wicked smile.

Many years later when An Xiao Li remembered the day her old car crashed into the sports car, she found out that it wasn't only the villain who smiled but fate smiled too.

'Miss, we were driving straight and you crashed into our car, the person one hundred percent responsible is you miss,' the ice glacier said.

An Xiao Li in that moment felt that her fate was too wicked like the ice glacier's wicked smile.

An Xiao Li secretly gripped her hands ready to drive off. She summoned innocent eyes to look back at the ice glacier because she didn't want to be a homeless pauper that was why she needed to get to her interview. 'Oh? I'm really sorry. Can you gentlemen give me more room so we can discuss it properly after I reverse my car?'

The ice glacier used an index finger to push the bridge of his glasses up, he forced a smile and stepped back from her car. 'Ok.'

The moment the ice glacier stood back, An Xiao Li slammed her door, gripped the steering wheel and reversed. She braked beside the Versace LP640 car. '13xxxxxxxxx, call me after the car's fixed, I'll compensate for the damages. I need to go somewhere important. Bye.'

An Xiao Li felt she was a good person. She was sincere about giving the two

young handsome men compensation. The catch was... they needed to be able to hear her number that she recited fast as a machine gun. Besides if they could afford the sports car then they weren't paupers like her.

The gentle driver Li Wei Ran secretly glanced at Chen Yu Bai for the twelfth time.

'What?' Chen Yu Bai asked.

'Your car... is it the same car you ordered six months ago and it was flown here yesterday?' Li Wei Ran asked.

'Um,' Chen Yu Bai said.

'Third brother! Are you expecting me to replace your car?' Li Wei Ran asked.

'No need,' Chen Yu Bai said.

'You gave me a scare... then why did you let her go?' Li Wei Ran asked.

'Why wouldn't I let her go?' Chen Yu Bai asked.

'Even if you don't need her to pay you back, you can't let her scam you like you're an idiot,' Li Wei Ran said.

'She didn't lie. She gave her real number and she did have somewhere she needed to be,' Chen Yu Bai explained. He folded the document he was holding. 'She's going to an IT company I'm familiar with for an interview.'

Li Wei Ran raised an eyebrow but didn't need to ask anything else. His third brother looked like a hunter stalking his prey.

In the sports car Chen Yu Bai looked out the window and leisurely adjusted his glasses.

It was the start of spring and everything was sprouting like An Xiao Li's heart.

'Miss An?' an interviewer asked.

'Ah?' An Xiao Li asked. She snapped out of her daze and nodded with the interviewer. 'Oh, I was listening.'

The IT company An Xiao Li applied for was the best IT company in the district.

When she sent her resume she thought she had no chance to get an interview but felt lucky the moment the IT company's HR called her to arrange an interview.

But... An Xiao Li graduated from an IT college, she felt being interviewed to be the executive's secretary didn't seem to match her qualifications. She wanted unlimited access to their computer systems.

'Miss An, I asked you if you wanted to work for our company?' the interviewer said. He felt that she was an ordinary candidate and had slow reactions. He didn't understand why the new CEO requested her to be the new CEO's secretary.

'Of course I want to work here,' An Xiao Li said. She gritted her teeth, it wasn't what she was hoping for but she didn't want to be homeless. 'Can I ask when will I start work as an official employee?'

'Tomorrow,' the interviewer said. He sighed. He explained the work induction process to her and paused. 'Miss An...'

An Xiao Li blissfully smiled at the interviewer. 'Yes?'

The interviewer gulped down his tactless question and let out a fake laugh. 'Ha ha, it's nothing. I wanted to say that I hope in the future we'll work well together.'

An Xiao Li's first week of working passed quickly and by the weekend she plopped herself on Qin Sang's sofa and munched on potato chips as she recounted the joy of working at the best IT company in the district.

'There's something clogging your brain,' Qin Sang said. She was typing on the keyboard and didn't bother looking at her dummy best friend. 'Your Miss Chen, if she finds out you're working as a secretary I wouldn't be surprised if she pulled your hair back to her house.'

The Miss Chen that Qin Sang meant was An Xiao Li's wicked mum.

An Xiao Li tripled the force she used for munching the pitiful potato chips. 'But I can't find another job. Sang Sang, why is it all the other IT companies rejected me?'

An Xiao Li felt disgruntled, after all she graduated from a famous IT college.

Qin Sang sighed. 'That's because those IT companies have good insight when they look at a person.'

'If they have such good insight then why didn't they hire me?' An Xiao Li asked.

'It's because of their good sight that they didn't hire a dummy,' Qin Sang explained.

'Qin-Sang!' An Xiao Li said and her eyes widened in protest.

Qin Sang stopped typing, lifted her head and laughed out of the blue. 'An Xiao Li, my intuition is telling me to warn you. The CEO you're about to serve has grudges against you that can't be resolved easily.'

An Xiao Li cried out her frustration and threw the chip packet onto the floor. She crossed her arms in front of her chest. 'Hey, are you writing a shady scene?'

Qin Sang smiled wickedly and didn't refute her dummy best friend's assumption. There was a speck of amber in her eyes that shone beautifully and mysteriously under the living room's soft orange lighting.

An Xiao Li's whole body shivered. 'Qin Sang, right now you look like a wicked witch.'

An Xiao Li wanted to modify her comment, Qin Sang didn't just look like a wicked witch, Qin Sang was a wicked witch.

At work An Xiao Li's body shook more than when she was in the same living room as the wicked witch, she wanted to keep herself invisible in the work crowd.

'Welcome CEO Chen,' an old man greeted. He was the same old man who interviewed An Xiao Li. The old man's beer belly shivered at CEO Chen's intimidating aura. He winked at An Xiao Li to signal her to quickly greet her new boss.

Someone behind An Xiao Li pushed her forward. She quickly presented the bouquet of flowers to her new boss. 'Welcome...' She wanted to properly introduce herself to her new boss but that person disappeared before she even

said her name.

An Xiao Li's lower body was stiff including her hands that held the bouquet of flowers – the ice glacier didn't bother to glance at her once and left her stranded in front of her co-workers.

An Xiao Li's female co-workers that witnessed her being snubbed were all dressed up glamorously that day hoping to catch their new CEO's eye. At first those women were dissatisfied that the ordinary An Xiao Li got to present the bouquet of flowers to their CEO. But after seeing An Xiao Li frozen with the bouquet of flowers hanging in mid-air those women were satisfied An Xiao Li was publicly rejected by their CEO. Some of those women offered An Xiao Li insincere comforting words. 'It's rumoured that Mr Chen junior is a cold person. Don't take his rejection to heart, he didn't accept the flowers from you because he hates you.'

An Xiao Li gave her co-workers a stiff smile. Inside her heart she was crying out to the heavens – 'heaven please be merciful and don't let the ice glacier recognise me as the one that crashed the sports car.'

'An Xiao Li, pour me a cup of coffee and bring it into my office,' Chen Yu Bai ordered through the intercom.

An Xiao Li put down the computer accessories she was probing and rushed to pour the ice glacier a cup of coffee.

Inside the ice glacier's office, An Xiao Li saw him reading reports at his work desk. He sat with his back to the window and the sunlight made his crisp white shirt glow. If she wasn't scared for her life then she would have been able to appreciate how handsome the ice glacier looked whilst reading the reports.

An Xiao Li kept her head down and walked toward the ice glacier whilst silently praying that he didn't recognise her.

An Xiao Li felt lucky that the ice glacier only glanced once at her before dismissing her. 'Put the cup of coffee down and you can leave.'

An Xiao Li made her escape and walked to the door but the door slammed into her nose.

Li Wei Ran entered his third brother's office and looked at third brother's

secretary. She was rubbing her nose but he felt she looked familiar like he met her somewhere before.

Li Wei Ran scratched his head and tried to remember who third brother's secretary was. 'Miss...'

'Don't you know how to knock on a door before entering?' Chen Yu Bai asked coldly.

'Ah...' Li Wei Ran uttered out of surprise.

Li Wei Ran thought his third brother was usually not human but it was unlike third brother to make a big deal about entering third brother's office unannounced.

Then Li Wei Ran connected his third brother's unusual behaviour and the appearance of third brother's secretary. 'Oh...' He pointed at his third brother's secretary, he recognised she was the same girl who crashed the sports car.

'Oh, you're...' An Xiao Li said but stopped mid-sentence. She recovered her EQ and remembered she was inside the ice glacier's office and couldn't reveal she was the person who crashed the sports car. 'I was granted permission to leave.' She held her bleeding nose and walked out the door.

The moment the door closed, Li Wei Ran wanted to confirm his suspicion. 'It's her, the girl that crashed into your sports car.'

Chen Yu Bai laughed coldly and it made Li Wei Ran's legs turn to jelly. As Li Wei Ran feared he was going to pay for hurting his third brother's prey. Third brother rolled up his sleeves, stood and stepped toward him.

'Spare me... someone help me...' Li Wei Ran cried out pitifully.

'Bam! Bam bam! Bam...' the sounds of a remorseful third brother being severely clobbered.

'Ah! A a! Ah!' mysterious cries were heard from the new CEO's office.

Outside the office of doom, An Xiao Li quietly thought to herself that of course Li Wei Ran was the gentle and handsome driver, he was someone who was unforgettable after one look at him.

After the mysterious cries from the ice glacier's office, the gentle and

handsome driver stepped outside. There were pitiful bruises on his chin but he seemed more awake then he was when An Xiao Li saw him entering the ice glacier's office.

The gentle and handsome driver checked out An Xiao Li from head to toe. 'Miss are you fixing the computer?'

An Xiao Li secretly rolled her eyes and looked up at the annoying gentle and handsome driver. 'No, I'm not.'

'It's obvious you're fixing the computer,' Li Wei Ran said.

'If you knew I was fixing the computer then why did you ask me?' An Xiao Li scolded to revenge her nose.

Li Wei Ran's teasing mood was spoiled and he rubbed his swollen chin. He checked that his third brother's office door was closed properly and leaned closer to An Xiao Li. 'You and your boss... what stage are you two up to?'

An Xiao Li almost dropped the LCD screen that she was holding. She took a deep breath and was about to add another bruise to the former gentle and handsome driver's chin but the intercom turned on.

'Li Wei Ran, within in three seconds make yourself disappear!' Chen Yu Bai ordered.

A cold air passed An Xiao Li's desk before she calmed down, the former gentle and handsome driver was nowhere to be seen.

In the evening, at a bar.

Qin Song was licking the ice in his mouth provocatively that caused the beauty next to him blush and he winked to tease her more.

After Qin Song was done playing around, he checked out the girl that Li Wei Ran was pointing at. 'She's the one that crashed the Versace LP640? It can't be her.'

Qin Song squinted his eyes to take another look at the girl that Li Wei Ran pointed at again. 'Impossible. A girl who can crash into third brother's car and got away scot-free has to be at least an otherworldly beauty.'

‘Take a look at my bruises. Third brother personally gave them to me just because I opened his office door and bumped into her a little bit,’ Li Wei Ran said and pointed at his pitiful chin.

Out of the six Liang’s sworn brothers, Li Wei Ran and Qin Song were the youngest. Li Wei Ran was fifth brother and Qin Song was sixth brother. Out of their four oldest sworn brothers, it wasn’t their first brother Liang Fei Fang that they feared most but it was their third brother Chen Yu Bai. If they offended their first brother at the most they’d be given a beating but if they offended their non-human third brother – Chen Yu Bai never personally used his fists to reprimand them but he’d use a customised method to make them feel dying wasn’t as bad as living.

By deduction if Chen Yu Bai broke his normal behaviour and personally used his fists on one of his sworn brothers it proved that the ordinary girl was ‘really special’ to him.

Qin Song curiously probed Li Wei Ran’s swollen chin. ‘Is it your real chin or fake?’

Li Wei Ran didn’t hesitate to slap Qin Song’s hand away. ‘Third brother asked that we keep an eye on her, he’s on his way.’ He texted back to his third brother and put his phone back in his pocket.

Qin Song was happy to follow his third brother’s order, he stood and made his way onto the dance floor. He stayed close to An Xiao Li and her friend.

An Xiao Li was celebrating the final day of her work probation and was excited that the following day she was a full time employee at her workplace.

An Xiao Li struggled for four years at her IT college and felt proud she secured a job at the best IT company in the district. The thought of receiving her first salary made her giddy. She wanted to put money in front of Miss Chen and proclaim – ‘Mum, I received my salary and this is your allowance to spend for the month.’

Each time An Xiao Li’s mum gave her an allowance, she thought her mum must have given her the same look she wore whilst thinking about giving her mum an allowance.

An Xiao Li snapped out of her daze and didn't see the handsome men around them. She spoke loudly in Qin Sang's ear. 'Sang Sang, what happened to the handsome men? I can't see them on the dance floor.'

Sang Sang didn't bother looking at An Xiao Li. Sang Sang was too busy dancing with a man.

An Xiao Li felt it was strange that the handsome men who were circling Sang Sang before were standing at a distance from the dance floor looking at Sang Sang with regret. The dance floor was packed but people gave Sang Sang and the man with Sang Sang plenty of breathing space to dance.

An Xiao Li focused on the man dancing with Sang Sang – it was the former gentle and handsome driver that was kicked out of the ice glacier's office in the afternoon, Li Wei Ran!

An Xiao Li stepped closer to Li Wei Ran and because the dance floor was noisy she was given the golden opportunity to scream into his ear, it made her nose happy. 'What-a-coincidence!'

Li Wei Ran felt his ear drums were broken. On the outside third brother's girl looked ordinary but why did she own such powerful vocal cords?

Li Wei Ran led Qin Song, third brother's girl and her friend into a quiet private room to spare himself from booking an appointment to see an ENT doctor.

'This is my best friend, Sang Sang,' An Xiao Li introduced in a less deafening voice.

Li Wei Ran smiled gently at Qin Sang and lifted his glass to toast her. Qin Sang was charmed and smiled back at him.

'I'm Li Wei Ran,' Li Wei Ran introduced himself. He sipped the wine in his glass before he introduced his cousin. 'This is Qin Song.'

An Xiao Li looked closely at Qin Song who was one of the men dancing around Sang Sang before. Qin Song was handsome too but he was a different class to Li Wei Ran and Chen Yu Bai, Qin Song was too handsome that it was criminal.

'Hi!' Qin Song greeted and his smile was dazzling.

'Hi,' Qin Sang smiled politely but there was sharpness behind her eyes. 'Mr

Wild?’ She directed at Qin Song.

Li Wei Ran and An Xiao Li turned to look at each other and laughed at Qin Song.

Li Wei Ran thought that his third brother’s vision was deadly, third brother picked a rare girl bundled with another rare girl.

Qin Song wasn’t bothered by the jesting at his expense. ‘Sang Sang? What’s your family name?’

Qin Sang was usually a cold person but tonight she drank too much and joked in front of strangers. She noticed Qin Song wasn’t angry and felt she was too harsh on him and compensated him with a sincere smile. ‘Qin, Qin Sang.’

‘Oh? We share the same family name, let’s toast to our family name,’ Qin Song said.

Li Wei Ran thought it was a joke looking at Qin Song the wolf. Qin Song was someone who loved to eat meat but tonight Qin Song acted like a house pet.

Chen Yu Bai quickly arrived to the lively private room at the bar.

At that time An Xiao Li was playing rock-paper-scissors with Li Wei Ran. One of her leg rested on the low table and her powerful vocal cords put on a loud display.

Qin Song was talking to Qin Sang but he was amused by her. She was smiling at him, talking with him but he felt there was a barrier around her that she didn’t let anyone in.

The more Qin Song couldn’t get Qin Sang to put her guard down the more uneasy he felt.

‘Third brother!’ Qin Song greeted when he noticed Chen Yu Bai at the door.

Qin Song glanced at Li Wei Ran and Li Wei Ran smiled slyly.

Chen Yu Bai maintained his indifferent front and gently nodded his head to greet his two youngest sworn brothers.

An Xiao Li was startled, retrieved her unladylike leg and rushed to sit straight. Qin Sang took the opportunity to assess Chen Yu Bai then Qin Sang turned and

gave An Xiao Li a wicked smile that made An Xiao Li's dormant goose bumps popped up.

The ice glacier sat next to An Xiao Li and it made her awkward. She didn't dare react to any of Li Wei Ran's teasing, sat stiffly on the sofa and admired the plate of watermelon.

'Hey, Xiao Li,' Li Wei Ran called in a familiar way to provoke his third brother. It worked because he felt Chen Yu Bai's cold aura was tripled. 'Your CEO, how does he treat you? If he doesn't treat you well come and work at my company. I'm also looking for a secretary.'

An Xiao Li glanced at the ice glacier. 'At the moment I don't plan to change jobs.'

'Wow, it's hard to find such a loyal employee,' Li Wei Ran teased. He looked at Chen Yu Bai who gripped a wine glass too tight that veins nearly fell out. He felt his mood lifted, it was Chen Yu Bai's fault for hitting his chin. He rubbed his swollen chin. 'What about this, whatever your CEO's paying you, I'll raise it by ten? Will that sway your loyalty to me?'

'Ten times?' An Xiao Li asked in disbelief.

An Xiao Li multiplied her salary in her head by ten and pictured her wicked mum having a heart attack after receiving a big monthly allowance from her. Her eyes were round and bright as the moon.

'Twenty times!' Chen Yu Bai counter-offered coldly.

An Xiao Li didn't notice the cold aura next to her. Her body felt the opposite after she heard twenty times, it burned up!

'Let's go,' Chen Yu Bai ordered.

Chen Yu Bai grabbed An Xiao Li's shirt collar and pulled her outside the private room.

'Ah... Qin Sang!' An Xiao Li said.

An Xiao Li was worried about the way Qin Song was looking at Qin Sang like a starving wolf.

Chen Yu Bai stopped for a while and assessed Qin Sang. Both their eyes

gleamed and understood – they were kindred spirits, cast from the same mold.

Chen Yu Bai pulled An Xiao Li outside whilst smiling. He realised why such a dummy like Xiao Li wasn't sold on the black market, it was because there was a wicked witch protecting An Xiao Li.

End of Chapter One (Part 1)

Related

part 2

Chapter One (Part 2 of 2)

An Xiao Li sat in the ice glacier's car and fiddled with her seatbelt. She drank a lot at the bar and felt dizzy but the person sitting next to her made her body tensed more than she felt dizzy.

Chen Yu Bai didn't talk and the atmosphere in his car was heavy awkwardness. An Xiao Li wanted to break the ice but didn't know what were his interests.

'CEO Chen, do you have music we can listen to?' An Xiao Li asked softly.

'No music,' the ice glacier said.

An Xiao Li was speechless. She knew when dealing with someone who wasn't human, there was nothing to talk about with them.

Chen Yu Bai drove silently on a route that didn't look like he was taking An Xiao Li back to her home. 'CEO Chen, um, I think you took the wrong turn to take me home.'

'I want you to accompany me somewhere, there's something I want you to see,' Chen Yu Bai said gently and he even turned to give An Xiao Li a wicked smile.

The ice glacier's wicked smile gave An Xiao Li the shivers.

What Chen Yu Bai wanted to show An Xiao Li was... the sports car she crashed.

'Um...' An Xiao Li stalled to think of a reason why she didn't admit her guilt. 'CEO Chen, let me explain...'

'No need,' Chen Yu Bai said. He gave An Xiao Li a pile of unpaid repair bills. 'This belongs to you.'

An Xiao Li accepted the repair bills and her head felt like it was about to roll on the floor... one, ten, one hundred, one thousand, ten thousand, one hundred thousand... was the sports car made from diamonds? Did it have wings to fly to Mars? She only scraped a bit of paint off the sports car, why were there so many zeros on each repair bills?

‘I think you can’t pay off all the repairs at the moment, because you’re my employee I’ll be lenient and let you repay me slowly. Your monthly salary is 4,189.22, times that by twenty, in one year and four months you’ll be able to pay off all the repairs,’ Chen Yu Bai explained.

Chen Yu Bai smiled wickedly and patted An Xiao Li’s shoulder as though he was sympathetic to her plight.

An Xiao Li’s legs became jelly. ‘Hehe... hehe... CEO Chen... you’re... really witty.’

Chen Yu Bai crossed his arms and laughed coldly in a way that asked An Xiao Li – ‘Do you really think I’m kidding?’

‘Ah... I just started working, if I don’t have a salary I’ll starve to death,’ An Xiao Li embellished to evoke Chen Yu Bai’s sense of compassion.

Chen Yu Bai pretended he was seriously thinking of a solution to help An Xiao Li’s stomach from starving to death. ‘Mmm... I see where you’re coming from. Ok, each month you can budget 1,000 for food allowance, in one year and nine months you’ll be able to pay off all the repair bills.’

Chen Yu Bai softened his wicked smile but An Xiao Li’s eyes looked soulless and he felt a rare sense of amusement.

An Xiao Li’s lips trembled, everything around her was a blur, she wanted to faint and play dead... she wanted it to be a bad dream.

‘Also, about the interest we’ll follow the rate of a long term bank loan. It’d take you two years and one month to pay off the repairs plus interest, but I’ll be kind and round it off to three years to give you extra time to pay off your debt. I don’t want my loyal employee to resent me,’ Chen Yu Bai said. He adjusted his glasses and smiled brightly. ‘For the next three years you can’t quit your job or I’ll consider what you paid off as compensation for my emotional injury from the collision and you’ll still have to pay off all the repair bills.’

An Xiao Li’s world blackened, she fainted. It was the first time she fainted in her twenty years of living.

Ultraman flew down from the sky and his two eyes lit with justice. ‘Xiao Li, don’t worry, I’ll protect you.’

There were love hearts in An Xiao Li's eyes and she nodded her head.
'Ultraman, hurry and beat up that wicked ice glacier to death.'

Ultraman smiled sweetly and took off his mask, the handsome face underneath belonged to Chen Yu Bai but he was smiling wickedly at An Xiao Li.

'Whoa...' An Xiao Li mumbled.

An Xiao Li opened her eyes slowly after she was conscious again.

'You're awake?' Chen Yu Bai asked.

An Xiao Li sat up – OMG! Did she xxoo with the ice glacier whilst drunk?

'You don't have to check your body. I'm not interested in sleeping with a kid. You were drunk and fainted. I drove you back to my place,' Chen Yu Bai said coldly. He wasn't happy when An Xiao Li lifted the bed sheet to check her body.
'Go wash up and make me breakfast.'

A towel and toothbrush was thrown on An Xiao Li's sleepy face and there were still rheum in the corner of her eyes. She continued to look for signs whether she was torn.

Who did that ice glacier call a kid? An Xiao Li mumbled curses behind his back. Her bra size was cup B, as if he'd seen a kid with a matured body like hers.

An Xiao Li quickly showered in the bathroom. After she returned to the ice glacier's room she walked around to take a closer look. There was no dust, no unnecessary furnishings that cluttered his room, only one large bed, the ceiling looked cold as his handsome face – it was like his office, everything smelt like him.

Chen Yu Bai's patience ran out and he knocked on his bedroom door. An Xiao Li reluctantly left the safety of his bedroom that didn't have a kitchen and its owner in it.

An Xiao Li walked to the kitchen and opened the fridge. There was only a carton of eggs from the supermarkets in the fridge.

An Xiao Li's eyes were about to be torn from glaring all morning. She scooped some white rice into a bowl, added two eggs and after seasoning she cooked it in the microwave. Presto, scrambled eggs and cooked white rice.

An Xiao Li served the breakfast she cooked to Chen Yu Bai. He didn't look grateful. 'What's this?'

'It's delicious!' An Xiao Li said.

An Xiao Li grabbed her portion into her bowl and happily ate like she always did if there was food in front of her.

Chen Yu Bai stared at An Xiao Li scooping a spoon of her unappetizing breakfast dish into her mouth. 'Is it delicious?'

'Um,' An Xiao Li said and nodded her head in satisfaction.

Chen Yu Bai grabbed her bowl off her, tasted a spoonful of it and creased his forehead but he continued to swallow.

An Xiao Li had trouble swallowing her masterpiece. 'Why are you fighting over food with me?'

Chen Yu Bai lifted his head from An Xiao Li's poison dish and looked coldly at her.

An Xiao Li was frozen from the ice glacier's dagger and changed tactic by sweet talking him 'Hehe, I was wrong, the food belongs to you. Don't mind me, go ahead and eat.'

An Xiao Li maintained a stiff smile, inched the ice glacier's bowl toward her and slowly swallowed food from his bowl.

'About... CEO Chen?' An Xiao Li said.

'What?' Chen Yu Bai asked.

'About last night...' An Xiao Li said.

'I didn't do anything. Don't try to entrap me,' Chen Yu Bai said.

'Not that... I meant about the compensation,' An Xiao Li explained.

An Xiao Li suppressed her anger because she wanted him to smile gently at her and say – 'An Xiao Li, I was kidding last night.'

'Oh,' Chen Yu Bai said.

'Oh?' An Xiao Li asked.

‘Oh,’ Chen Yu Bai said.

‘Oh...’ An Xiao Li said.

An Xiao Li’s deflated body fell back on her chair, the ice glacier wasn’t kidding, she was sold!

Chen Yu Bai turned to the side and secretly smiled. He turned back and looked coldly at An Xiao Li. ‘Apart from the dish you cooked for breakfast, do you know how to cook anything else?’

‘Oh...’ An Xiao Li said.

An Xiao Li was mentally depleted and didn’t have the energy to explain Qin Sang was a cooking guru and she learnt some cooking skills from Qin Sang to survive her own cooking.

‘If you make dinner for me each night, I’ll pay you an extra 2,000 a month,’ Chen Yu Bai offered.

‘5,000!’ An Xiao Li bargained.

An Xiao Li inflated her body onto the chair, the ice glacier had deep pockets. A pauper like her was in no position not to exploit it.

‘1,000!’ Chen Yu Bai heartlessly halved his original offer.

‘2,000! 2,000!’ An Xiao Li agreed to the original offer and thought the ice glacier was also a blood sucker.

‘1,500. Plus you need to clean my place each day too,’ Chen Yu Bai said in a don’t-mess-with-me-tone.

An Xiao Li didn’t dare to argue and quickly nodded her head before the blood sucker added more chores.

Chen Yu Bai saw An Xiao Li pouted her lips in defeat. His loyal employee resented him openly and he couldn’t hide his smile any longer.

End of Chapter One (Part 2 of 2)

Related

part 1

Chapter Two (Part 1)

Since An Xiao Li was sold to Chen Yu Bai, she suffered each day.

An Xiao Li worked nine to five, after work she rushed to the supermarkets to buy ingredients and rushed to Chen Yu Bai's house to cook dinner.

An Xiao Li did feel guilty about running off after the crash and not contacting Chen Yu Bai and Li Wei Ran. But she honestly thought that they were rich young masters who weren't the type to take revenge on a pauper like her.

Not to mention An Xiao Li's old QQ windshield was broken whilst only a little paint peeled off from the sports car.

Karma dealt An Xiao Li a heavy blow, she was a prime example of 'what goes around comes around.'

The ice glacier was a picky eater, the dishes he chose were more complicated by the day – what human chose to eat homemade spring rolls on a weekday?

An Xiao Li carefully avoided the boiling oil from splashing onto her sold body and occasionally turned the spring rolls over to make sure all sides were cooked.

The slave master Chen Yu Bai was resting in the living room. 'An Xiao Li, how much longer?'

An Xiao Li pouted her lips in defiance and wanted to scold the slave master if he was going to criticise she cooked too slow than he should cook his own dinner!

An Xiao Li's phone rang when she was the busiest in the kitchen, she turned off the stove and took out her phone. The caller ID was Qin Sang.

'Sang Sang...' An Xiao Li sulked.

'Um,' Qin Sang said.

An Xiao Li heard from Qin Sang's tone that there was something troubling Qin Sang. 'What's wrong?'

‘Let’s go out tonight,’ Qin Sang suggested.

‘Ok! I know, after I finish cooking I’ll come find you,’ An Xiao Li said.

An Xiao Li didn’t need further details and was never too busy to comfort her best friend. Each person owned a best friend and the two of them never needed a reason to risk their own necks to save each other.

The ice glacier suddenly appeared in the kitchen and stood behind An Xiao Li.
‘Who?’

None of your business! An Xiao Li wanted to say, instead she forced herself to smile sweetly. ‘CEO Chen, the spring rolls are almost ready. Can you set the table?’

Chen Yu Bai smiled wickedly and pushed the bridge of his glasses up. In the hot kitchen cold sweat formed on An Xiao Li’s back, she’d served him long enough to know those gestures meant he was up to no good and the recipient was dead meat.

‘Ok,’ Chen Yu Bai said.

Chen Yu Bai maintained his wicked smile at the dining table.

‘You...’ An Xiao Li said.

An Xiao Li was enraged and pointed a shaky finger at Chen Yu Bai.

Chen Yu Bai put his chopsticks down and pretended he didn’t see An Xiao Li’s accusing finger pointed at him. ‘What?’

An Xiao Li was angry enough for her intestines to rumble, the complicated spring rolls that she risked her life to make! The ice glacier ate one bite and rejected her spring rolls. ‘Taste bad. Change it to dumplings.’

An Xiao Li wasn’t in the mood for dumplings, she wanted to break the ice glacier and let him melt at the bottom of the ocean.

‘You wanted to eat spring rolls,’ An Xiao Li reasoned.

‘Um,’ Chen Yu Bai said. He nodded his head in agreement. ‘Now I want to eat dumplings, hurry up and go buy me dumplings, it’s getting late.’

‘You know it’s late. Eat the spring rolls for now or I can make you fried egg

rice?’ An Xiao Li coaxed.

Chen Yu Bai was amused by An Xiao Li’s gentle tone in an attempt to dissuade him. He smiled charmingly and showed two straight rows of sparkling white teeth. ‘Dumplings.’

An Xiao Li stomped her foot. ‘Why are you... forget it. I have plans tonight, whether you like to eat spring rolls or dumplings is up to you. I’m leaving.’

‘Salary deduction,’ Chen Yu Bai said.

‘If you want to deduct then go ahead, I don’t want it!’ An Xiao Li said.

An Xiao Li glared at the ice glacier, kicked her slippers and ran to the door to put on her shoes to leave.

Behind An Xiao Li’s back was a familiar cold aura, she turned around and saw a dark shadow close to her. Her vision was obstructed and she didn’t see any light but she smelt the familiar mint scent behind her.

Chen Yu Bai saw An Xiao Li’s shock as she was trapped between him and the door. His mood became happy. ‘What you said before... who was it that didn’t want it?’

An Xiao Li felt dizzy being pressed against the door by the ice glacier. She was forced to be honest under his intense interrogation. ‘Me...’

The ice glacier’s handsome face gradually ballooned, he breathed out hot air onto her face and his cool mint scent made her felt light headed.

An Xiao Li’s final thought was – the ice glacier’s lips weren’t cold, his lips were soft.

Chen Yu Bai felt the same, An Xiao Li’s lips were the softest lips in the world. He kissed every inch of her lips and his tongue traced the curves of her lips. He waited until her body was limp against his chest to pry her teeth apart for his tongue to play with her tongue.

When An Xiao Li was breathless, Chen Yu Bai reluctantly let her go. His eyes shone like a sunrise. ‘That was your punishment. In the future you can’t talk nonsense like you did before or you’ll be punished. Ok?’

Chen Yu Bai’s voice was gentle as calm water. He regretted letting An Xiao Li go

too soon. He rubbed her swollen lips with a finger.

An Xiao Li gasped and breathed heavily. She lifted her head and looked into the clear bright eyes of the ice glacier who a moment ago kissed her breathless. His tongue licked the corner of his lips seductively and it reminded her it was the same tongue that conquered her tongue.

An Xiao Li bolted out the door to escape the ice glacier's satisfied smile.

'Cheers!' An Xiao Li said.

An Xiao Li knew she didn't need to say comforting words to Qin Sang, it was enough for Qin Sang to have her help Qin Sang drown anxieties.

Qin Sang smiled gently and clinked glasses with An Xiao Li. She thought that An Xiao Li most of the time was a dummy jellyfish but during the times she needed to lean on her dummy best friend, An Xiao Li understood her clearly without her having to utter a word.

'Sang Sang,' An Xiao Li called. She slumped her head on the bar table. 'I... tell me what does it feel like to like someone?'

'There are many ways to show someone you like them,' Qin Sang said.

'Qin-Sang!' An Xiao Li protested.

An Xiao Li thought Qin Sang did everything perfectly, but Qin Sang's flaw was that Qin Sang's advice was always too condensed.

'Are you shaken by Chen Yu Bai?' Qin Sang asked concisely.

'Um... what?' An Xiao Li admitted by mistake.

An Xiao Li's surprised eyes were faced with Qin Sang's didn't-you-hear-I-stated-the-obvious look.

'A man that ticks all the boxes is set in front of you, it'll be strange if you won't dazzled,' Qin Sang said. She shook her glass. 'Don't worry, go ahead and like him.'

An Xiao Li exhaled and used the bar table to prop her body up. 'But in the past you advised me to find a mature and honest man so I won't be played.'

‘In the past when I gave you that advice was before I knew you would meet someone named Chen Yu Bai,’ Qin Sang explained.

‘But he’s not sitting on an honest pedestal. He’s... wicked! Also he’s treacherous, petty, difficult to please, has an unlikeable temperament, a cold face, mean...’ An Xiao Li rambled like a drunk.

Qin Sang smiled slyly and gently poked An Xiao Li’s head. ‘You’ve made progress with him?’

An Xiao Li was the type that needed a push to be willing to take a step forward. If Chen Yu Bai didn’t turn on the ‘light switch’ with her then she absolutely wouldn’t rack her brain to think about their abnormal relationship.

An Xiao Li nodded her head to admit hers and Chen Yu Bai’s abnormal relationship progressed a step. ‘Um.’

An Xiao Li remembered that it was Chen Yu Bai who kissed her but he didn’t elaborate what the kiss meant. Besides she felt like she shouldn’t like him – he always bullied her. What a headache!

‘Xiao Li, your life motto is take one step at a time. Love is the same, go with the flow,’ Qin Sang explained and fell into a love forlorn trance of her own.

End of Chapter Two (Part 1)

Related

part 2

Chapter Two (Part 2 of 2)

The following work day, An Xiao Li was timid at work. Even when she brought a cup of coffee into the ice glacier's office, her heartbeat was fast and loud. In contrast Chen Yu Bai acted like nothing happened between them and maintained a serious work mentality as usual.

An Xiao Li used a dozen reasons to go in and out of the ice glacier's office but he stayed solid as a mountain. She berated herself, indeed last night he was just messing with her feelings.

But An Xiao Li consoled herself that she didn't lose her first kiss to the ice glacier. Her first kiss was given to a man named Chu Hao Ran.

An Xiao Li remembered her first kiss, it happened at Qin Sang's eighteenth birthday banquet. It was Qin Sang's birthday but the guests consisted of Qin Sang's dad's business acquaintances and Qin Sang's distant extended relatives. She was the only guest invited that was chosen by Qin Sang. At the banquet she wore a beautiful gown and like Cinderella she met a charming prince from a distant palace named Chu Hao Ran.

At the mention of Chu Hao Ran's name, he was nothing more than a rich man who was charming and cunning. Amongst the forest of butterflies he locked his target – An Xiao Li, she was an innocent little lamb under the twinkling lights.

Chu Hao Ran was a seasoned hunter, how were ordinary girls like An Xiao Li supposed to survive the hunt? An Xiao Li was simple minded and fell easily into Chu Hao Ran's net made of a gentle facade.

But when An Xiao Li was too deep in her delusion and wanted to marry Chu Hao Ran at all cost, Qin Sang intervened, requested her teachers for leave and begged her parents to let her and Qin Sang to go on a holiday together. The holiday destination turned out to be a house Qin Sang rented in a suburban area and she was locked in there for a week.

In that week of detention, An Xiao Li's phone was confiscated and there was

no landline phone or internet access in the rented house. Qin Sang rented dvds for her to watch, cooked many delicious dishes for her to eat but she wasn't allowed to leave the house.

After that one week of detention, An Xiao Li was released and able to see the sun in the sky. She rushed to find her prince charming, it was unfortunate he turned out to be a frog who was kissing another princess in a car.

After An Xiao Li rejected the frog's pursuit she went home and rolled around on the sofa. She oinked like a pig. 'Qin Sang I hate you! If you knew it'll end up like this then why didn't you lock me up from the start?'

Qin Sang wasn't moved by her best friend's tears. 'When Chu Hao was chasing you, did he treat you well?'

An Xiao Li's tears fell more when she nodded her head. Chu Hao Ran was extremely good and attentive to her. Each morning he called her and gave her an air kiss through the phone, in the afternoon he sent someone to deliver lunch to her and at night he gave her a bouquet of red roses and took her to a five star restaurant. He always personally picked her up and drove her home. Sometimes if he was on a business trip he called her to report to her what he was doing and that he missed her. When he came back from business trips there was always a present in his hands to give to her.

'Females are born to be loved and doted on. A rich, gentle, young and handsome player like Chu Hao Ran was sent by the heavens to romance a thousand females. In our lifetime if we didn't get to experience being chased crazily for a few days by someone like Chu Hao Ran then it wouldn't be complete,' Qin Sang explained.

'Then why did you lock me up for a week?' An Xiao Li asked.

'What else was I supposed to do if I didn't lock you up? Wait until you're completely trapped by him, once he was sick of playing with you he'll toss a cheque at you and leave? An Xiao Li are you someone who can easily let go of that kind of betrayal?' Qin Sang asked.

An Xiao Li fiddled with her fingers and mumbled to herself.

'Be grateful you got to experience being chased by a seasoned hunter and you

got to reject him. For Chu Hao Ran you were the first girl he met that rejected his pursuit. Saying that he'll never forget you for the rest of his life is too much. But at least the next time he meets you he'll remember, An Xiao Li was the first girl in his life that said no to him,' Qin Sang explained.

Qin Sang laughed coldly. 'Understand?'

An Xiao Li broke out of her self-pity mode.

At night An Xiao Li made dumplings whilst softly berating herself. Chen Yu Bai sat on the sofa like an emperor and occasionally hurried her along.

'What's with the long face?' Chen Yu Bai asked.

Chen Yu Bai's good mood was spoiled by An Xiao Li's bad mood.

'It's nothing,' An Xiao Li said.

An Xiao Li thought even if she told the ice glacier about Qin Sang's phone was stolen there was nothing he could do. Suddenly she remembered he was sent to manage the company she worked for by Liang's company and wasn't it rumoured the big boss of Liang's company was a triad boss? That would mean there was hope to find Qin Sang's phone.

'CEO Chen...' An Xiao Li called sweetly. She walked to the sofa. 'Are you a triad member?'

Chen Yu Bai was laughing on the inside. He saw An Xiao Li's eyes were bright with anticipation and he wanted to tease her. 'What do you think?'

'Yes,' An Xiao Li said.

'No,' Chen Yu Bai said.

An Xiao Li's sweet smile disappeared and she glared at the ice glacier.

'Why are you looking for a triad member?' Chen Yu Bai asked.

'Qin Sang's phone was stolen, it's important to Qin Sang... but you can't help me,' An Xiao Li said.

Chen Yu Bai pushed his glasses up. 'What if I can help?'

‘I will...’ An Xiao Li said. She thumped her chest to show she was serious. ‘Um... tell me what you want.’

‘Oh?’ Chen Yu Bai asked. He leaned into An Xiao Li and smiled wickedly. ‘Whatever I want?’

An Xiao Li thought the ice glacier rarely smiled so when she saw him smile beside her, she was dazzled.

Chen Yu Bai stopped smiling and pretended nothing happened. ‘The dumplings are about to burst.’

An Xiao Li snapped out of her daze and ran into the kitchen to save her dumplings. Chen Yu Bai smiled behind her back as she wrestled with the stove.

The dumplings that night were burst open and soggy. But Chen Yu Bai and An Xiao Li were moody for different reasons and they both silently ate the abused dumplings.

At work the following day, An Xiao Li clamped her work phone between her ear and shoulder whilst using a screwdriver to rotate the screws off the computer hard drive. ‘Sang Sang? Why didn’t you call my personal phone?’

The ice glacier’s work computer was broken every two days, sometimes it was the software and other times it was the hardware that needed to be fixed. An Xiao Li was frustrated fixing his computer countless times. Finally she dared to suggest to him to get a new computer. Unexpectedly he laughed gently and spoke to her in a serious tone. ‘Do you want your salary deducted to finance a new one?’

An Xiao Li understood completely after that conversation. She wasted her brain cells, the ice glacier never liked her to begin with. What he liked was to find ways to bully her.

‘I got back my stolen phone. Xiao Li, transfer the call to your boss, I want to talk to him,’ Qin Sang said.

‘Hello,’ Chen Yu Bai greeted coldly.

‘I’m Qin Sang. I have my phone back, thank you for your help,’ Qin Sang said.

‘Miss Qin, it was nothing. You don’t need to be courteous,’ Chen Yu Bai said.

‘Oh? I don’t need to be courteous?’ Qin Sang asked suspiciously.

The pen in Chen Yu Bai’s hand stopping writing, he smiled because he knew Miss Qin Sang knew why he helped.

Chen Yu Bai lifted his head and looked out his office window in front of him and saw An Xiao Li in a rush to fix his computer, he smiled wider. ‘Miss Qin if I said you need to, how will you show me?’

Qin Sang laughed. ‘If you want me to be courteous with you, my courtesy will be useful.’

‘Oh? Qin Sang you’re very courteous,’ Chen Yu Bai said.

‘No need for thanks,’ Qin Sang said.

Chen Yu Bai hung up the phone and admired An Xiao Li’s focus on his ‘broken’ computer.

End of Chapter Two (Part 2 of 2)

Related

Chapter Three

Chapter Three

An outsider who saw a man of 'jade status' accompanying a friend to the supermarkets, who knew how to choose the right ingredients from milk to fresh vegetables would have thought that the friend was blissfully happy.

The man of 'jade status' was Chen Yu Bai and the friend was An Xiao Li. An Xiao Li wasn't blissfully happy as the other customers thought, she was nervous. She secretly glanced at him before she hid junk food into the trolley and glanced back at him to see if he noticed.

Chen Yu Bai pretended he didn't see anything. When An Xiao Li's back was facing him to grab yogurt from the fridge, he took the opportunity to take the junk food out of the trolley.

By the time Chen Yu Bai and An Xiao Li were at the counter to scan their groceries, she scrunched her face and sulked.

'There's still this in the trolley,' Chen Yu Bai said. He gave An Xiao Li the lollipop. 'What a scary sulky face.'

An Xiao Li accepted the lollipop then threw it into the trolley with the bagged items. 'I don't like eating lollipops!'

'I like watching you eating lollipops,' Chen Yu Bai said in an as-a-matter-of-fact tone.

An Xiao Li bit her lips, how was she supposed to argue with someone who wasn't human?

In Chen Yu Bai's car An Xiao Li sighed. She thought the way they argued with each other was like an old married couple but in reality he was from a different realm to her. Whilst she was lost in her thoughts her phone rang and her eyes lit up when she saw the caller ID. 'Moshi Moshi!'

'Moshi your head!' Xuan Tu said. 'Heads up, the wolf man found out there's been people missing lately and wants to do a roll call today.'

‘I’ll be right there, do your best to stall the wolf man before I get there,’ An Xiao Li said.

An Xiao Li hung up the phone and looked at her watch. Only forty minutes left. She was heartbroken, she’d need to take a taxi.

‘Um... about tonight, CEO Chen can you cook your own dinner? I need to go to class,’ An Xiao Li pleaded.

‘You’ve graduated,’ Chen Yu Bai said but kept his eyes on the road.

‘I have half a year left. All my IT subjects are completed but I still have a Japanese course I voluntarily chose to study left. Drop me off at the next side street,’ An Xiao Li said.

An Xiao Li texted the news to Qin Sang and pointed to the direction of the next side street at the same time.

‘I’ll take you,’ Chen Yu Bai said.

Chen Yu Bai grabbed An Xiao Li’s left hand that was pointing to a side street and held her left hand whilst driving her to class.

An Xiao Li’s warm left hand was gripped by Chen Yu Bai’s cold hand. She was speechless. She felt a lump of saliva in her throat and swallowed. She turned to look out the window and pretended she didn’t notice anything, but she felt... disturbed.

Chen Yu Bai was able to smile unnoticed.

Qin Sang was closer to the college and arrived before An Xiao Li. When An Xiao Li arrived to their class, she saw Qin Sang sat at a table at the front.

Qin Sang smiled when she saw Chen Yu Bai was behind An Xiao Li. ‘I didn’t know your boss was going to be here too. I’ve only saved one spot, we’ll need to squeeze together to fit.’

Chen Yu Bai nodded his head and sat down.

The moment Chen Yu Bai made his appearance in An Xiao Li and Qin Sang’s class, the other students were in awe of him and didn’t understand what a

mature handsome man was doing in their class.

The curious glances An Xiao Li received from her classmates Xuan Tu and Mac made her disgruntled. She wanted to know the real reason why the ice glacier was sitting next to her in class too.

When An Xiao Li asked the ice glacier why he was following her to her class, it wasn't a satisfactory answer – 'it's been a while since I've taken a class and I'm in the mood to reminisce.'

An Xiao Li sat between Chen Yu Bai and Qin Sang, three people sharing two seats was uncomfortable. Xuan Tu and Mac were sitting on the other side of Qin Sang at their table. Mac was about to go find an empty seat somewhere else to give them room but Qin Sang pulled Mac back down and Qin Sang glanced at Chen Yu Bai's hand on An Xiao Li's waist. Mac understood and awkwardly sat back down to cooperate with Qin Sang.

An Xiao Li didn't dare move and whispered into Chen Yu Bai's ear. 'Your nails... can you release your hand?'

Chen Yu Bai pulled An Xiao Li's waist closer to him. 'It's logical to adapt to the available space.'

An Xiao Li didn't think it was logical but didn't dare voice it. Instead she secretly poked Qin Sang.

Qin Sang opened her Japanese textbook and didn't bother to look at An Xiao Li. 'You brought along a guest, why are you trying to get others involved?'

Chen Yu Bai laughed. He thought Miss Qin Sang was an interesting person.

Chen Yu Bai decided to spare An Xiao Li from turning into a ripe tomato, he withdrew his hand from her waist.

It was a double period and An Xiao Li's classmates exchanged curious glances with her at least one hundred times.

Chen Yu Bai noticed An Xiao Li's secret resentful glances at him. 'What's wrong?'

'It's nothing...' An Xiao Li said.

Except... An Xiao Li wasn't looking forward to be hung and given a beating by

Xuan Tu and Mac until they were satisfied with her confession.

‘Then what’s wrong with your friends?’ Chen Yu Bai asked.

Chen Yu Bai gave Xuan Tu and Mac a warning look for gesturing a slit throat at An Xiao Li.

Xuan Tu and Mac received a high voltage glare from Chen Yu Bai, and Xuan Tu and Mac both silently vowed to break An Xiao Li’s bones.

‘It’s nothing but hunger,’ Qin Sang said.

Chen Yu Bai forced a smile. ‘An Xiao Li and I haven’t ate dinner either. Qin Sang and the two lovely beauties will you do me the honour of joining us for dinner after class?’

Mac nodded her head with too much force that the sounds of cracked bones were heard, whilst Xuan Tu put on a shy front.

Qin Sang laughed at Mac and Xuan Tu who were smitten by Chen Yu Bai’s attractiveness. Qin Sang glanced over at An Xiao Li’s pleading eyes and nodded to join them for dinner.

An Xiao Li sighed in relief. She was grateful for her best friend’s protection. ‘Qin Sang...’

It wasn’t An Xiao Li’s pleading eyes that were the most persuasive... Qin Sang removed An Xiao Li’s nails and conveniently pushed An Xiao Li to her boss.

Chen Yu Bai conveniently had his arms opened ready to receive An Xiao Li into his chest.

Class was dismissed and Chen Yu Bai drove four girls to dinner.

Xuan Tu and Mac felt awkward requesting Chen Yu Bai to take them to an expensive restaurant for dinner. Qin Sang knew Chen Yu Bai’s true nature, unless her dummy best friend opened her mouth to request to go to an expensive restaurant then Chen Yu Bai couldn’t care less where her classmates wanted to go.

An Xiao Li wanted to puke at the sight of her classmates in the backseat

pretending to be innocent little lambs and spoke in their stead. 'Can we go to Golden Age? It's rumoured the food there is divine!'

Xuan Tu and Mac suppressed their giddiness in the backseat and didn't dare to voice their opinions.

'Um,' Chen Yu Bai said.

Chen Yu Bai turned to give An Xiao Li a little-darling-I'll-listen-to-you look. Then he took the route to Golden Age, which was a restaurant he was familiar with.

An Xiao Li's heart was too busy beating with excitement to notice the adoring look Chen Yu Bai gave her. Her heart was excited because Golden Age was the most expensive restaurant in the district. She planned to first choose the most expensive dishes then afterward sample the other dishes. The look in her eyes was sweet-revenge-I'm-on-my-way!

At Golden Age, Qin Sang, Xuan Tu and Mac were dropped off at the door first. Chen Yu Bai and An Xiao Li stayed in the car to find parking.

After Chen Yu Bai and An Xiao Li found a parking they walked to Golden Age. At the door he whispered into her ear. 'The dinner bill will be deducted from your salary.'

An Xiao Li was shocked her way to sweet revenge was obstructed.

Chen Yu Bai caught An Xiao Li before she fell on the ground. He kept his arm around her waist into Golden Age and gently scolded her. 'You've grown how much and still don't look where you're going.'

On the way to a dinner table the envious Xuan Yu and Mac secretly pinched An Xiao Li's arm to vent their envy.

An Xiao Li's heart and arm ached. Chen Yu Bai half hugged and half dragged her to the dinner table she didn't want to sit at because of her pitiful salary.

Each time Chen Yu Bai ordered a dish An Xiao Li shivered when she looked up the dish's price on the menu.

'Also the crab noodles soup with chrysanthemum, the seafood curry...' Chen Yu Bai ordered.

'Enough!' An Xiao Li interrupted before Chen Yu Bai burnt her yearly salary.

‘Hehe, hehe... there’s only five of us, we can’t eat it all.’

Xuan Tu who sat next to An Xiao Li pinched An Xiao Li’s thigh then spoke in a soft voice. ‘That’s right, we can’t eat it all and it’ll be a waste.’

‘That’s right,’ An Xiao Li said in reference to ‘that’s right’ Xuan Tu’s pinch was strong and painful.

‘It’s the first time inviting others to dinner, how is it possible to be stingy?’ Chen Yu Bai asked.

An Xiao Li confirmed Chen Yu Bai wasn’t human. The person paying was her pauper self not the person who pretended to invite everyone to dinner. She thought since he was good at acting he should go play the role of an eunuch...

‘Also the bird’s nest soup, it’s Golden Age’s signature dish,’ Chen Yu Bai said. He smiled charmingly. ‘For drinks, bring two jugs of fresh tropical juice.’

An Xiao Li wanted an emergency evacuation, it was the only way to safeguard her salary.

After dinner, Xuan Tu, Mac and Chen Yu Bai became good acquaintances. An Xiao Li didn’t bother talking. She ate all the leftovers on the dinner table, if she was going to pay for dinner then she wasn’t going to let a scrap of food be wasted.

‘Eat slowly,’ Chen Yu Bai said.

Chen Yu Bai held a glass of tropical juice in front of An Xiao Li and used his free hand to gently rub her back.

An Xiao Li took a break from eating and lifted her head to give Chen Yu Bai a none-of-your-monkey-business look.

Xuan Tu knocked An Xiao Li’s head. ‘What are you looking at little girl? Watch out you don’t lose a few years.’

Xuan Tu thought that An Xiao Li’s boyfriend was handsome, generous, gentle and a hard catch to find but the little girl beside her didn’t know what a blessing was and even glared at the person paying for their dinner.

An Xiao Li cried on the inside.

Xuan Tu and Mac excused themselves to go to the bathroom, Qin Sang went to make a call and left Chen Yu Bai and An Xiao Li at the dinner table.

‘For you,’ Chen Yu Bai said and gave An Xiao Li the dinner bill.

An Xiao saw the total and closed her eyes in pain. Chen Yu Bai gave her his credit card and she went to pay the floor manager who stood behind the counter.

After An Xiao returned to her seat for a while the floor manager came to the dinner table and gave her the dinner receipt then spoke to Chen Yu Bai. ‘Third boss, fifth boss is upstairs. He asked for you to wait for him to come down.’

After the floor manager left, An Xiao Li looked suspiciously at Chen Yu Bai. ‘What did he call you? Third boss?’

Chen Yu Bai nodded his head. One of his hands was behind An Xiao Li’s seat and his other hand played with her hair.

‘Why did he call you third boss?’ An Xiao Li asked. She hit Chen Yu Bai’s arm. ‘Do you own Golden Age?’

‘One of the owners,’ Chen Yu Bai admitted.

‘Then why didn’t he give you a discount?’ An Xiao Li asked.

An Xiao Li was enraged and stood to go demand some of her money back from the floor manager.

Chen Yu Bai pulled An Xiao Li back down and continued to play with her hair. ‘Because... I don’t need to pay.’

‘Then what is this?’ An Xiao Li asked.

An Xiao Li waved the terrifying dinner receipt in her hand that she paid.

‘I don’t need to pay the dinner bill that’s my business, but you still need to pay,’ Chen Yu Bai said.

‘Why?’ An Xiao Li asked.

‘When you went to pay the dinner bill did he accept your money?’ Chen Yu Bai asked.

An Xiao Li nodded her head.

‘Eating dinner then paying for dinner, it’s expected, right?’ Chen Yu Bai asked.

An Xiao Li nodded her head.

‘Tonight your friends are invited for dinner, right?’ Chen Yu Bai asked.

An Xiao Li nodded her head.

‘You were the one who wanted to have dinner with your friends, right?’

An Xiao Li thought for a while then nodded her head.

‘Then isn’t it logical that you still need to pay for dinner? I gave you money in advance to pay for dinner, but whether he accepts my money or not has no connection with you,’ Chen Yu Bai explained.

An Xiao Li’s blood boiled to the top of her head but what Chen Yu Bai said was correct.

End of Chapter Three

Related

part 1

Chapter Four (Part 1)

Lately Qin Song was a frequent visitor to his third brother's IT company.

'CEO Chen,' An Xiao Li greeted the ice glacier. Then she gave the glass of coke and bun to Qin Song who sat on the sofa next to the ice glacier. 'Hi, is it Mr Bun or Mr Coke?'

Qin Song gave An Xiao Li a cheeky smile. 'I'm Qin Song, not Bun or Coke.'

An Xiao Li didn't bother calling Qin Song's name, of course she knew who he was – Mr Wild!

'Hey, let me hear you call my name once,' Qin Song teased.

An Xiao Li silently scolded Mr Wild – 'what did he take me for? A lap dog? As if I want to call his name even once.'

'Qin Song,' An Xiao Li called sweetly.

An Xiao Li sighed on the inside, if Mr Wild wasn't her boss' sixth brother she'd choke him with the bun.

'That's more like it, we're all friends here,' Qin Song said. He stood up and gallantly gestured for An Xiao Li to sit on the sofa next to his third brother and he moved to sit on the other side of his third brother. 'Xiao Li, take a seat. Let's have a friendly chat together. Are you going anywhere this weekend?'

'Um... I have plans with a friend,' An Xiao Li said.

'Oh? What are you doing with your friend?' Qin Song asked.

'Going to the cinemas,' An Xiao Li said.

'Where?' Qin Song asked.

'Why? Do you want to tag along?' An Xiao Li asked.

'Of course I'll come too, thanks for the invite,' Qin Song said.

An Xiao Li couldn't believe Mr Wild took her question as an invite. Mr Wild smiled too brightly that she was suspicious about his intentions toward Qin

Sang. She noticed Mr Wild's teeth were straight and pearly white like the ice glacier and wondered if all the Liang's sworn brothers' teeth were straight and pearly too.

'But it's just me and my friend. If you join us it'll be three people and wouldn't be convenient to find seats to sit together,' An Xiao Li reasoned.

'Ok, let's forget about the movie,' Qin Song said. He didn't want to go to the movies because Qin Sang could easily hide from him. He thought about a tropical beach destination and pictured himself rescuing Qin Sang from drowning in the ocean and silently applauded himself for his ingenious idea. 'Let's all go on a road trip to a beach.'

'She's busy working overtime this weekend,' Chen Yu Bai said.

An Xiao Li jumped up from the sofa. 'Why?'

Chen Yu Bai pulled An Xiao Li back down on the sofa next to him.

Qin Song was surprised and looked at his third brother. 'Before I came into your office, I heard Lisa and the others were making shopping plans this weekend.'

'Apart from An Xiao Li the others don't need to work overtime. It's up to me to direct An Xiao Li's work schedule to meet my needs,' Chen Yu Bai explained.

An Xiao Li turned away from the ice glacier and fisted her hands. That ice glacier! Didn't he know about the office rumour circulated about her? She was sick of the whispers behind her back saying that she slept with their boss to land her job. Didn't the ice glacier care about the fragile reputation of his little innocent secretary?

After An Xiao Li calmed down she turned back to confront the ice glacier but noticed Mr Wild's eyes looked back and forth between her and the ice glacier...

The moment Mr Wild stepped out of the ice glacier's office, An Xiao Li saw Mr Wild was surrounded by her female co-workers and he used his dirty mouth to spill nonsense about her and the ice glacier's kinky master and maid role play at the ice glacier's house.

'It's not like that!' An Xiao Li denied.

‘I owe CEO Chen a lot of money. That’s why I go to his house to cook and clean to pay off my debt...’ An Xiao Li explained hurriedly.

Qin Song silently applauded himself that An Xiao Li took his bait. ‘Xiao Li, how much do you owe third brother? I can repay third brother for you, after all we’re friends.’

An Xiao Li was deeply moved, her eyes were teary and her throat was choked with gratitude. Who knew Mr Wild was someone who valued friendship over money? ‘Qin Song...’

An Xiao Li was overwhelmed that she found a kindred spirit who understood she was framed that she didn’t notice the cold aura behind her.

‘Sixth brother, lately you have a lot of free time on your hand, right?’ Chen Yu Bai asked coldly.

Chen Yu Bai dragged An Xiao Li back to his office to keep her from escaping.

Qin Song was in a happy daze that he found a way to bribe An Xiao Li to gift wrap and deliver her best friend Qin Sang to him. But his third brother’s scary tone made him tremble awake. He obediently made his way back to his third brother’s office sofa to lessen his punishment. ‘Hehe... third brother... I’m not that free, I’ve been busy lately.’

Qin Song sat on the sofa and realised he was doomed. He foolishly unleashed his third brother’s jealous wrath.

‘Is that so?’ Chen Yu Bai asked. He adjusted his glasses and glanced at An Xiao Li who was ready to escape after securing a benefactor. He turned to face little Qin Song and laughed coldly. It was his way to show little Qin Song there was a ticking time bomb thrown into little Qin Song’s big mouth. ‘The way I see it, you’re about to be busier.’

Qin Song shivered and immediately stood to temporarily escape his third brother’s jealous wrath. ‘Third brother, I need to go back to Liang’s company. I don’t want to disturb your busy schedule.’

‘Do you feel uncomfortable owing me money?’ Chen Yu Bai asked.

Chen Yu Bai watched An Xiao Li who sat opposite him at his dining table chewing grilled chicken and he noticed her lips were shiny and stained with oil.

An Xiao Li chomped onto a chicken leg and pictured it was the ice glacier's leg. What a useless question! As if the ice glacier would feel comfortable owing someone money!

'It's not like that... not like that at all... I just feel guilty each time I think about my unsteady hands on the steering wheel crashing into your loveable sports car,' An Xiao Li lied.

'Answer me, yes or no?' Chen Yu Bai asked.

An Xiao Li was dead meat no matter what she answered. 'Yes...'

'Then if you owed Qin Song money you won't feel uncomfortable?' Chen Yu Bai asked.

'No, but I'll feel less uncomfortable than owing you money,' An Xiao Li said.

Chen Yu Bai was momentarily relaxed before he felt angry hearing An Xiao Li's careless answer.

'Qin Song likes Sang Sang so he won't need me to pay him back with money,' An Xiao Li explained but left out the part about Mr Wild wasn't going force her to do house chores for him either.

'You're not a complete dummy, you can see through him,' Chen Yu Bai teased.

Chen Yu Bai laughed at himself for liking a dummy who saw through others clearly but was clueless about how their relationship was in limbo.

'The way he looks at Sang Sang is like a starved wolf, if I didn't see through him that will be strange,' An Xiao Li said.

'Oh? What about me?' Chen Yu Bai asked.

Chen Yu Bai took off his glasses, leaned his face close to An Xiao Li and stared into her eyes.

An Xiao Li looked carefully at the ice glacier's brown eyes, long eyelashes and saw that he blinked once in a while. It was like his eyes could see through a person's soul... she was startled, OMG, the ice glacier was also a hypnotherapist!

An Xiao Li quickly grabbed a chicken wing and bit hard.

‘Mmm?’ Chen Yu Bai asked.

An Xiao Li silently asked herself if the ice glacier was going to make a love declaration. Her heart thumped in anticipation.

‘I said...’ Chen Yu Bai said gently as calm water.

Chen Yu Bai lifted An Xiao Li’s chin, his lips glistened and she felt he was ready to confess.

An Xiao Li couldn’t care less if the chicken legs and chicken wings on the dining table flew to a distant realm... in the world she only noticed the ice glacier’s lips that was about to confess.

‘I said... An Xiao Li the way you eat is too ugly,’ Chen Yu Bai said.

An Xiao Li fumed. Her left hand gripped her right hand. How many times did she tell herself not to be played by the ice glacier? She hated herself that she didn’t dare to stuff the chicken bones into his wicked mouth.

Chen Yu Bai was amused by An Xiao Li gritting her teeth. He put on his glasses and continued to eat dinner.

Chen Yu Bai ate happily whilst watching the way An Xiao Li was still quietly waiting for him to say something to her that she wanted to hear.

‘Hold the door,’ An Xiao Li shouted.

An Xiao Li wanted someone in the elevator to keep the door open for her.

Unfortunately for An Xiao Li one of the people in the elevator was Lisa. Lisa’s manicured finger nail must have pressed the close button, because the elevator doors were slowly closing. She ran to the elevator and silently cursed Lisa at the same time – ‘Lisa that bitch! Lisa that evil witch! You better pray to the heavens that you’ll never fall into my hands!’

An Xiao Li reached the elevator within a hand’s distance and prepared her body to be slammed into the closed elevator doors, but the elevator doors suddenly opened and her body slammed into someone’s chest.

That someone groaned in pain from the collision but didn't push An Xiao Li away. She smelt the familiar cool mint scent and realised that someone was the ice glacier. She knew he wanted to rub his sore chest but held back because there were other people in the elevator with them.

Chen Yu Bai scolded softly in An Xiao Li's ear. 'What are you running for?'

An Xiao Li gave Lisa a dagger. 'I didn't want to be late.'

'Can't you wake up earlier for work? You already eat a lot and now you're lazy too,' Chen Yu Bai teased.

The elevator was eerily quiet apart from Chen Yu Bai and An Xiao Li's whispers. The others in the elevator were shocked to see their CEO who was usually cold was whispering sweet nothings to his secretary An Xiao Li. It confirmed their suspicions, An Xiao Li was having an illicit affair with their CEO!

An Xiao Li felt her hands were tied... that ice glacier! Why was he acting shady in front of her co-workers? She thought he did it deliberately to make sure she was ostracized at work indefinitely.

An Xiao Li's fears came true when she sat on the toilet seat ready to pop out all the chicken she ate from last night's dinner out of frustration, she heard her co-workers gossiped about her and the ice glacier.

'It's true! I was in the lift with them this morning and heard their conversation clearly,' the first female said.

'OMG! What's so great about An Xiao Li? Her looks are ordinary and her dress sense is ordinary too,' the second female said.

'That's right! Why did CEO Chen take notice of her? I'm prettier than she'll ever be even with plastic surgery,' the first female said.

An Xiao Li's two female co-workers giggled like school girls and left the bathroom... she was constipated from their mocking.

An Xiao Li took her constipated body back to her work desk and used A4 documents as a shield for her ordinary looks not to be further mocked.

'Xiao Li, come into my office,' Chen Yu Bai said through the intercom.

An Xiao Li was dead in her work chair.

Chen Yu Bai called An Xiao Li's name again three seconds later. 'Xiao Li?'

An Xiao Li wondered who in her life truly cared about her to burn incense sticks to mourn her.

'An-Xiao-Li!' Chen Yu Bai boomed.

An Xiao Li's eyes were teary and she realised she was still alive... she took her half dead body to the ice glacier's office. 'What do you want?'

Chen Yu Bai was surprised by An Xiao Li's angry tone. 'What's wrong with you?'

'Nothing's wrong,' An Xiao Li said.

'If you don't tell me, I'll deduct your salary,' Chen Yu Bai threatened.

An Xiao Li silently fumed – 'that ice glacier! Didn't he have any other dirty tricks to threaten her with?'

'Speak,' Chen Yu Bai warned.

An Xiao Li gritted her teeth. 'This morning... in the elevator what you said to me in front of everyone, it made them misunderstand.'

'Oh? Misunderstand what?' Chen Yu Bai asked.

'I don't know what you're thinking, you never told me clearly what you're thinking. But, I don't assume that we're... I think things are... good the way they are now,' An Xiao Li confessed what she felt in the last few days.

'What's not good about the way things are now?' Chen Yu Bai asked gently.

'The two of us... I feel like, um, the way we are together is... abnormal? You're capable of finding someone who knows how to cook, and you're not poor...' An Xiao Li rambled.

'But you owe me money, apart from you doing house chores, I don't how else you can repay me for my loss,' Chen Yu Bai said in an as-a-matter-of-fact tone.

An Xiao Li thought what Chen Yu Bai said was logical but she felt... he treated her differently than how he treated others. 'But...'

'Mmm?' Chen Yu Bai asked.

An Xiao Li blushed and gathered her courage. ‘But... you kissed me.’

Each time An Xiao Li remembered how Chen Yu Bai kissed her in the spur of the moment, she knew he wasn’t serious but it was hard for her to forget his cool mint breath, his strong jaw and the tingling sensation of having his tongue in her mouth.

Chen Yu Bai smiled happily and An Xiao Li became acquainted with his office floor.

‘Xiao Li, why do you think I kissed you?’ Chen Yu Bai asked.

An Xiao Li didn’t dare to look at Chen Yu Bai. She stood frozen for a while then ran outside his office.

That work day, everyone except An Xiao Li felt that their CEO was in an unusual good mood.

End of Chapter Four (Part 1)

Related

part 2

Chapter Four (Part 2 of 2)

At night, An Xiao Li and Qin Sang weren't in the mood to see a movie. They went to the supermarkets to buy ingredients and went back to Qin Sang's house. An Xiao Li was the assistant chef and Qin Sang was the head chef, they cooked a hearty meal in the kitchen.

Qin Sang ate dinner regally. An Xiao Li sat opposite her ice queen best friend, every ten minutes An Xiao Li lifted her head from her bowl to put more food into her bowl. An Xiao Li demolished two mountain bowls of food but still felt hungry.

'Huh? What happened to all the food on the table?' An Xiao Li asked.

An Xiao Li rubbed her bloated belly and stood to scoop a bowl of rice since all the food was eaten.

'Enough, speak,' Qin Sang said to stop her dummy friend's stomach from exploding.

'What are you talking about?' An Xiao Li asked but avoided eye contact.

'I just wanted to eat a peaceful dinner before I hear your grievances. Look at the moping state you're in, it's too tragic,' Qin Sang said.

'Sang Sang...' An Xiao Li sulked. She put her chopsticks down on the table and went to plop her bloated body onto the sofa. She appealed to Qin Sang's love counsellor mode. 'I don't know... he doesn't say anything, but if he doesn't say anything how am I supposed to know?'

Qin Sang gently kicked one of the dummy's hateful legs. 'Get to the point.'

An Xiao Li held her leg and cried out to pretend she was kicked hard. Then she rolled around on the sofa. 'I'm not certain that he likes me and I don't know if I like him.'

'Then the first step is you need to be certain you like him,' Qin Sang advised.

'Does it count if I like his leather wallet and his money?' An Xiao Li asked.

'It counts,' Qin Sang said.

‘Then I like him a lot,’ An Xiao Li said.

‘Are you happy when you’re beside him?’ Qin Sang asked.

‘Happy... not happy,’ An Xiao Li said.

‘That’s good. Go with it, happy and unhappy blends together, life merely has those two kind of feelings intertwined, hard to have one and not the other. Besides you don’t have another choice,’ Qin Sang explained.

Qin Sang patted the dummy’s cheek. She thought someone like Chen Yu Bai didn’t want the woman beside him to be too proactive.

‘Why? If it’s not certain that both of us like each other, why stay beside each other?’ An Xiao Li asked.

‘If he doesn’t like you then why would he keep someone who is an inexperienced IT graduate, not beautiful or brilliant to be his secretary? If you don’t like him then why is it every few minutes you torture me with your crazy obsession about him?’ Qin Sang asked.

‘So what you mean is... he likes me?’ An Xiao Li asked.

An Xiao Li’s frown opened into a wide grin like a sunflower under sunlight.

‘I didn’t say it, you said it yourself,’ Qin Sang said. She kicked the dummy’s feet off the sofa armrest and went to turn on her computer. ‘Boy crazy dummy, go wash the dishes.’

On the weekend An Xiao Li took a shuttle to visit hers and Qin Sang’s hometown. Qin Sang left a couple of days earlier than An Xiao Li so she saw Qin Sang waiting for her the moment she arrived at the terminal.

Qin Sang saw the dummy’s depressed aura and without asking anything she knew the dummy was still troubled by Chen Yu Bai.

Qin Sang thought that playing a game of cat and mouse was an interesting aspect to love. It was like opening a palm then fisting it into a ball and seeing the other half relieved one moment then tensed the next. What was more satisfying than the feeling of triumph having the ability to control the other half’s moods?

An Xiao Li and Qin Sang ate breakfast with Qin Sang's mum Ye Dao. After dinner Ye Dao excused herself to go prepare a lesson to let them play on their own. The two girls held hands like they did when they were kids and strolled around the field of their old school.

An Xiao Li was frustrated that the ice glacier didn't make a new move. She was an impatient and self-tormenting type of person. Meeting someone who was calm and collected like the ice glacier made her admit defeat.

An Xiao Li sighed. A stroll didn't help her feel better. 'Let's go home.'

An Xiao Li walked Qin Sang back to Ye Dao's house and An Xiao Li went to find her wicked mum.

After An Xiao Li left, Qin Sang's phone rang and it was a number she didn't recognise. 'Hello, I'm Qin Sang.'

'Chen Yu Bai. Where's An Xiao Li?' Chen Yu Bai asked.

Qin Sang heard the angry tone in Chen Yu Bai's voice and didn't need to ask why. She laughed at his swiftness. He arrived in hers and An Xiao Li's hometown before An Xiao Li slept one night in their hometown.

Qin Sang hesitated to give Miss Chen's address because she was conflicted. Her best friend was a dummy and Miss Chen was wicked as hell. If Chen Yu Bai barged into Miss Chen's home unannounced there would be bloodshed.

'Meet me outside the school in front of the tallest section of the school, I'll be right there,' Qin Sang said.

Qin Sang hung up, changed into shoes and ran outside.

Qin Sang rushed to the planned meeting place and as she expected Chen Yu Bai arrived before she did. He was his tall and handsome self, which caused the school girls in their spring years blush and secretly stole glances at him. If it wasn't for his cold aura then those girls would have dared to start a conversation with him.

Qin Sang greeted Chen Yu Bai. The school girls saw Miss Qin talking with the handsome man they didn't recognise stirred their curiosity more and they pretended to be passing by to eavesdrop on Miss Qin and the mystery man's

conversation.

Qin Sang laughed at the school girls obvious attempts to eavesdrop but Chen Yu Bai looked like he found the school girls a nuisance and they increased his anger.

‘It’s a little hot. Let’s go grab drinks from the canteen then go find a shadier spot to sit,’ Qin Sang suggested.

Chen Yu Bai nodded his head, the nosy school girls got on his nerves.

‘Can’t you give into the dummy a bit?’ Qin Sang asked. She and Chen Yu Bai sat shoulder to shoulder on a long bench in front of the canteen and they each had a drink bottle in their hands. ‘Whatever she wants you can just be generous and give it to her. You don’t show any of your cards and give her mixed signals, can’t you see it’s a sin to waste time?’

Chen Yu Bai was still angry. The last few days An Xiao Bai was upset with him. When she was at his place she didn’t bother trying to cook something slightly edible, lingered in the kitchen for a long time and came out with a plate of fried egg rice. If he said a few words to her, she’d be more upset and ignore him. He couldn’t believe she didn’t come over to his place last night and when he called she didn’t pick up. He had to use his connections to find out where she ran off to without saying a word to him.

Qin Sang sighed and looked into the distance. ‘You have your own principles and so does the dummy. Why must it be the dummy who gives into you? Besides you know the dummy isn’t someone who can unconditionally put up with another person who isn’t openly affectionate. You can’t fault her ideals, what girl can wait forever for a man who can’t even say one loving word?’

‘I know,’ Chen Yu Bai said.

‘Of course you know. There’s nothing Chen Yu Bai doesn’t know but you don’t want to reveal anything. Have you thought perhaps... you’re too sure of yourself?’ Qin Sang said.

‘I have reasons to believe in myself,’ Chen Yu Bai said.

‘The dummy doesn’t,’ Qin Sang said.

‘She has me that’s enough,’ Chen Yu Bai said.

‘Before she has you, the dummy was able to survive on her own. Chen Yu Bai, you’re not an emperor. What gives you the right to call all the shots for both you and her?’ Qin Sang asked.

Chen Yu Bai narrowed his eyes and his index finger pushed the bridge of his glasses up. He glared at Qin Sang. ‘Can you be certain if I followed your advice... things will be better?’

‘Not certain. But it’ll be better than how things are now,’ Qin Sang said.

Qin Sang squeezed the bottle lid in her hand and shook it but couldn’t open the bottle.

Chen Yu Bai opened the lid of his bottle and gave it to Qin Sang. He exchanged it for her bottle. Indeed the bottle lid was tight and he had to use a lot of force to twist the bottle lid off.

Qin Sang laughed. She couldn’t believe Chen Yu Bai was capable of being courteous and used her bottle to toast him, because he wasn’t completely hopeless and could catch the dummy.

Ye Dao came back home from visiting Miss Chen’s house for lunch. She saw Qin Sang came downstairs with a packed suitcase. ‘I’m back from Miss Chen’s house, An Xiao Li was in a rush and left before you.’

‘She’s gone?’ Qin Sang asked.

Qin Sang was surprised. Did An Xiao Li have a brain haemorrhage? Why else would An Xiao Li prefer to take the bus then get a lift from her? It couldn’t be Chen Yu Bai was that quick and managed to convince An Xiao Li to leave with him. She got a bad feeling that something was wrong.

End of Chapter Four (Part 2 of 2)

Related

part 1

Chapter Five (Part 1)

An Xiao Li left her hometown without saying anything to Chen Yu Bai. Since she returned for two nights she'd starved him, didn't explain anything to him, she gave him the cold shoulder and if she was forced to talk to him at work she'd call him 'CEO Chen' in a distant tone. It made him angry enough that in one work day he vented on two managers and as a result they resigned.

The atmosphere at Chen Yu Bai's company was tensed.

An Xiao Li was the only employee who acted like everything was normal. She felt not having one person in her life wouldn't stop the world from spinning.

'I'm sorry, can I borrow your computer to check my email? My phone is out of battery,' Wang Qi asked.

Wang Qi was a young man from the Design and Programming Department. An Xiao Li thought his looks was easy on the eye and gave him a sweet smile from her work chair.

An Xiao Li looked at Wang Qi closely as he checked his email on her computer, his ten fingers were long and typed smoothly on the keyboard in an appealing way – she liked men with beautiful long fingers like Wang Qi's fingers.

An Xiao Li recognised Wang Qi's email address was provided by her IT college.

'Oh, you go to the same IT college as me,' An Xiao Li said in a forced gentle voice.

Wang Qi gave An Xiao Li a gentle smile. His glasses couldn't hide the interest in his eyes he had for her. 'I helped to design and code the email system for our IT college.'

An Xiao Li poured Wang Qi a glass of water and smiled brightly. 'I'm An Xiao Li, nice to meet you big brother.'

An employee came out of Chen Yu Bai's office and Chen Yu Bai caught An Xiao Li flirting with Wang Qi. He wasn't impressed and gave the oblivious laughing

pair a dagger.

That afternoon Wang Qi was summoned to his CEO's office and the new design plan his team came up with for a program was criticised endlessly.

Wang Qi felt something was strange. He wasn't the only one who helped to make the design plan. So it wasn't right that he was the only one who was criticised heavily and it made him worried his CEO was going to fire him.

When it was one hour left before home time, Chen Yu Bai stepped out of his office and leaned on his office door. He wore a black collar shirt with the two top buttons unbuttoned that hinted of a chiseled chest underneath the shirt. His sleeves were rolled up to his elbows and revealed strong arms. Even his cold aura didn't stop most of the female workers from swooning over his allure.

'Tonight you don't need to come over my place,' Chen Yu Bai said.

An Xiao Li's heart tightened then she fumed. That ice glacier! How dare he ruin her innocence in front of her co-workers with such a shady comment?

Chen Yu Bai went back into his office to retrieve a pink box then walked to An Xiao Li's work desk to give her the pink box. 'This is for you. Wear it tonight to go to a banquet with me.'

Chen Yu Bai spoke to An Xiao Li in a cold voice but when he saw her looking down at the pink box, he put out a hand to tuck a stray strand of hair behind her ear.

'I still have to stay back to look over some work plans. You can leave early to do your hair and makeup, after you're done call me and I'll pick you up,' Chen Yu Bai said. He noticed An Xiao Li sat frozen on her chair and sighed. 'It's a work banquet, your hourly rate will be doubled for working overtime.'

An Xiao Li snapped out of her shock. She lifted her head up and looked into the ice glacier's cold eyes. She picked up her bag and the pink box, stood with her head held high and walked straight outside the office.

Behind An Xiao Li's straight back, Chen Yu Bai gritted his teeth and wasn't impressed by her cold attitude after receiving a gift and an invitation to go to a banquet as his date.

An Xiao Li thought if she was going to be paid overtime she should go to the banquet. She took a taxi to Qin Sang's house and forced her to come to the hair salon with her. Whilst she was waiting at the salon to be served, she invited Qin Sang to come with her to the banquet.

'Not interested in going,' Qin Sang said.

An Xiao Li secretly gave her ungrateful friend a glare for not appreciating her generous gesture to give Qin Sang and Chen Yu Bai more alone time. Her sour mood was interrupted by a handsome male hairdresser who approached her and asked her what hair style she wanted.

'The most expensive hair style,' An Xiao Li said. She tossed the magazine on the table in front of the mirror. Then she faced the mirror and gave the handsome male hairdresser who stood behind her a serious look. 'I'll leave it up to you, money's not an issue. Whether you curl or straighten my hair I don't care. I don't want a hairstyle that suits me, I want the most expensive hairstyle.'

Qin Sang noticed the handsome male hairdresser smiled too brightly that roses would wither. 'Straighten her hair and dye it a light sherry wine colour.'

The handsome male hairdresser listened to Qin Sang's request and went to prepare the hair dye. An Xiao Li took the opportunity to convince Qin Sang to go to the banquet. 'Sang Sang, you need to come tonight. I want to give you a surprise.'

'Oh? Are you planning to cause trouble?' Qin Sang teased.

An Xiao Li stood and turned around to face Qin Sang. 'Qin-Sang! It's because of you... forget it, you're coming! I've prepared a dress for you, you're coming and that's final!'

Qin Sang noticed the other customers staring at her and An Xiao Li and felt helpless. 'Ok, Ok. It's just a banquet. I'll go, what are you overreacting for?'

An Xiao Li sat back down and mumbled to herself.

Qin Sang sighed and read a magazine. She thought she must have owed the dummy in a previous lifetime. Growing up with the dummy there were countless times she had to ward off sleazeballs from taking advantage of the dummy and kept the dummy from self-destructing. She couldn't believe even after the

dummy met Chen Yu Bai, she was forced to babysit the dummy whilst the dummy was on the date with Chen Yu Bai.

When An Xiao Li and Qin Sang left the salon there was still an hour left until seven. Qin Sang's house was near the banquet venue so they changed and did their makeup at Qin Sang's house.

An Xiao Li gave the ice glacier's pink box to Qin Sang. Qin Sang wore the fancy dress that was inside the pink box. On the other hand An Xiao Li didn't own any fancy dresses and raided Qin Sang's cupboard for a suitable dress to wear.

When Qin Sang opened the pink box she got the same bad feeling like when she was leaving her hometown last weekend. What secretary could afford a custom made branded dress that cost more than two years of her salary?

Qin Sang wore the expensive dress and twirled in front of the mirror to gauge An Xiao Li's reaction. 'Is it beautiful?' She wasn't surprised that An Xiao Li's expression wasn't happy.

Qin Sang looked through her cupboard flooded with dresses given to her that she'd never worn. She chose a strapless knee length white dress with beautiful white roses embroidered around the top of the bodice and also around the bottom of the hem. The white dress suited An Xiao Li's innocence. 'This dress, wear it.'

An Xiao Li put on the white dress Qin Sang ordered her to wear and checked herself out in the mirror. For most of An Xiao Li's life she kept her hair short but forced herself to keep it shoulder length in college. The handsome male hairdresser straightened her unruly hair and made her hair look longer than usual. The bodice of the white dress flattered her small waist and the hem was the right length to make her look taller than usual. The sour expression she had on when she saw how beautiful Qin Sang looked in the dress that the ice glacier prepared changed into a satisfied smile after she wore Qin Sang's white dress.

When Chen Yu Bai's car arrived outside Qin Sang's house, Qin Sang and An Xiao Li just finished doing their makeup. Qin Sang purposely went downstairs first. She wasn't surprised to see Chen Yu Bai leaning on his car waiting for them, he looked at the dress she wore and gave her a dagger.

An Xiao Li linked arms with her best friend and coldly greeted the ice glacier. The three of them silently sat in his car. On the way to the banquet venue the roads were deserted and the traffic lights were green for them. The ice glacier must have been excited to spend alone time with her best friend, because he sped to the banquet venue and her face was bleached white since she was in the death seat.

Qin Sang sat calmly in the backseat and enjoyed the scenery outside the window. Occasionally she looked into the front mirror to assess Chen Yu Bai's mood. His eyes were narrowed and his lips were pursed but if he stole glances at An Xiao Li, his eyes would soften. She thought he wasn't human but she conceded he was handsome despite his cold aura.

Chen Yu Bai braked suddenly in front of the banquet venue and left tyre burnout marks on the road.

An Xiao Li exhaled. 'Are you in a rush to reincarnate?'

Qin Sang saw Chen Yu Bai glared at An Xiao Li, he looked like he wanted to say something to An Xiao Li but pursed his lips. Qin Sang felt she'd seen enough of the lovebirds' tiff. She unbuckled her seatbelt and wanted to escape.

An Xiao Li unbuckled her seat belt and quickly got out the car to detain her best friend. She gave the ice glacier a why-aren't-you-seizing-your-love-interest look. Unexpectedly the ice glacier pulled her away from her best friend and into his chest and dragged her inside the banquet venue.

An Xiao Li wasn't happy to be held captive by the ice glacier up thirty-three levels of the building. But the moment the elevator doors opened her eyes lit up. The banquet venue was a heavenly sight, the lights sparkled, there was a cloud of glittering dresses... then her vision was obstructed by Mr Wild.

Mr Wild strode toward Chen Yu Bai and An Xiao Li, he wore a thin white shirt and long black pants. He also wore his trademark charming smile. An Xiao Li thought handsome men who stood on two legs weren't a rarity and she told herself there was no need to hang onto someone who didn't belong to her.

'Hi third brother. Hi Xiao Li,' Qin Song greeted.

Chen Yu Bai said a few words to Qin Song then Chen Yu Bai escorted An Xiao Li

to meet the other guests.

An Xiao Li noticed a girl who wore an extravagant dress and looked annoyed. The girl gave off a haughty aura.

‘Found it yet?’ the girl asked in a threatening manner.

Near the entrance a portion of the floor was barricaded by a mob of uniformed men who stopped anyone from entering or leaving the area. Inside the circle was another fifteen uniformed men who were on all fours searching for something on the snow white carpet. When they heard the girl’s threatening question, it made them search more frantically.

An Xiao Li wasn’t surprised to see the ice glacier’s bad mood turned amused at the sight of someone else in trouble. He crossed his arms and stood on the sidelines to watch the scene play out.

An Xiao Li heard the elevator doors opened and turned around to see a mob of handsome men that looked like gangsters in suits stepped out of the elevator. She only recognised one of those men because a photo of him was always included in her IT company’s annual calendar – big boss Liang Fei Fang.

An Xiao Li checked out the infamous big boss, he was indeed broad and looked like a cold blooded killer. She didn’t know who was more intimidating the ice glacier or big boss.

‘What happened?’ big boss asked.

‘Lost an earring!’ the girl dared to yell back at big boss.

An Xiao Li was shocked to see big boss strode to the girl and put his arms out... she was about to scream ‘don’t’ but instead of hurting the girl, big boss hugged the girl.

‘What are you worked up for? Look at your wrinkled face, it’s like a bun,’ big boss said in a gentle voice that would soothe anyone to sleep.

An Xiao Li’s eyes were widened at the mismatched couple’s public display of affection. But the ice glacier and Mr Wild turned away from the mismatched couple as though they were accustomed to big boss doting on the girl.

‘Lift up the carpet, cut it into little squares and find the earring,’ Liang Fei Fang

ordered calmly.

Immediately the big boss' mob that was with him in the elevator lifted the carpet.

An Xiao Li thought it was a pity to destroy such a beautiful carpet. She was glad she wasn't the carpet that was cut into pieces.

'I told you it was a waste to buy an expensive carpet for the entrance! If you changed it to a grindstone floor entrance it'll be better,' the girl said.

An Xiao Li pressed a hand over her heart to stop herself from having a heart attack... big boss laughed gently instead of cursing the girl.

'Ok, what colour do you want?' big boss asked.

'Red,' the girl said.

An Xiao Li pitied the heavenly banquet venue was going to be tainted with an entrance from hell with the red grindstone replacing the snow white carpet.

'Business is exempt tonight. Change all the carpet floors on this level to red grindstone,' big boss ordered.

'Wow, that's cool!' An Xiao Li cried out.

An Xiao Li was deeply moved enough to applaud loudly but a cold laugh stopped her.

Chen Yu Bai saw love hearts in An Xiao Li's eyes and laughed coldly. He stroked her hair that was dyed and straightened in the afternoon and whispered in her ear. 'It'll be cooler if she said to my first brother Xiao Li's hair is beautiful, he'll have someone pluck each strand of your hair and turn it into a wig for her to play with.'

An Xiao Li automatically hid behind the ice glacier's back, held onto her hair and didn't dare to say a word.

That whole night An Xiao Li avoided the girl named 'Gu Yan.' An Xiao Li assessed Gu Yan's hair from a safe distance. Gu Yan's hair was long but wasn't as beautiful as her hair. She was scared Gu Yan had both money and the backing of big boss to pluck all her hair to make a wig.

An Xiao Li felt that the work banquet the ice glacier said didn't feel like a work banquet. There were no CEOs from other companies except for big boss Liang Fei Fang.

Big boss spent the night coaxing the long faced Gu Yan who lost an earring. The ice glacier played snooker with a young man who was tall and skinny but An Xiao Li felt that there was a feminine element to the mystery young man like the handsome male hairdresser that styled her hair. Mr Rong who An Xiao Li didn't know what was his placement amongst the Liang's sworn brothers, but he had a beautiful singer in his arms and drank wine. Mr Wild the youngest of the Liang's sworn brothers held a microphone and butchered a song and An Xiao Li wondered who he inherited his singing voice from.

An Xiao Li targeted Mr Wild because she thought he was the easiest to deal with out of his sworn brothers. She pulled his shirt and pleaded pitifully. 'Can you help me get Echo's signature?'

Qin Song whistled and patted An Xiao Li's arm. 'Go get it yourself. If I go third brother will think I want to use you.'

'Please help me... Sang Sang really likes Echo too,' An Xiao Li pleaded.

As An Xiao Li expected exploiting Qin Song's weakness worked, he quickly went to get Echo's signature.

Echo saw sixth brother personally asking her for her signature and laughed loudly then asked him where she should sign.

Rong Yan leaned into Echo's face and blew into her ear. 'Sign your bra and give it to him...'

Echo laughed, punched Rong Yan and spoke endearingly. 'Too hateful.'

Qin Song shivered the whole way back to An Xiao Li. He put the the two signed books onto An Xiao Li's hands and her eyes lit up like stars.

'I don't care what style,' Qin Song said. He gave An Xiao Li a microphone. 'Sing a song with me.'

An Xiao Li was in an extremely good mood after receiving Echo's signature for herself and Qin Sang. She smiled brightly and sang with Mr Wild on stage. They

were kindred spirits and joined forces to fend off the non-humans who liked to pick on them. They chose upbeat songs to sing and danced like rabbits.

‘Ah!’ Ji Nan cried out.

Ji Nan held her injured right hand. She didn’t know where her third brother was looking at but he accidentally hit her right hand with the cue stick.

Rong Yan put down his wine glass on a table, pushed Echo off his lap and rushed to Ji Nan. He held her right hand that was red and creased his forehead.

‘It’s nothing,’ Ji Nan said. She saw her second brother wanted to kill someone and suppressed the pain. ‘Hehe... you can go. It’s nothing. Third brother let’s keep playing.’

Chen Yu Bai didn’t hear anything Ji Nan said. He was busy giving a dagger to the monkey pair singing and dancing together on stage.

Ji Nan and Rong Yan followed the direction of their third brother’s dagger. They both ‘oh’ and understood. They knew it was rare for their third brother to bring his girlfriend along to a gathering to meet their sworn brothers and friends unless third brother seriously liked his girlfriend. But they couldn’t understand why third brother was eating sour livers.

‘Winter’s ending and spring is starting, the sun is shining on a happy family...’ An Xiao Li sang.

‘Yeah yeah...’ Qin Song attempted to harmonise.

‘Every song sang brought back memories, remembering how I met you that year...’ An Xiao Li sang.

‘But I know,’ Qin Song attempted to sing the male singer’s verses. ‘Winter ends the loneliness of autumn, the wind blows spicy and bitter memories...’

‘I miss you, yeah yeah...’ An Xiao Li sang in a deeper voice like Qin Song.

Qin Song and An Xiao Li’s emotional outpour into the song they sang attracted everyone’s attention even the long faced Gu Yan.

‘Listen to me, hand in hand, come with me, living a peaceful life, yesterday’s gone, tomorrow is too late, marry me today...’ the monkey pair sang.

The monkey pair was facing the lyrics on the screen and their backs were turned to the audience so they didn't see the wide range of looks aimed at their oblivious swaying bodies.

Gu Yan laughed happily, beside her was Liang Fei Fang who only cared that Gu Yan was happy and didn't take notice of the monkey pair. Ji Nan and Rong Yan looked back and forth between the monkey pair's performance and their third brother who continued to eat sour livers... they knew after the song was over, sixth brother would have a tragic ending.

Chen Yu Bai fisted his hands and slowly relaxed his hands. Finally his long index finger leisurely pushed up his glasses and released an icy aura, which made Ji Nan who stood beside him stumble back three steps.

End of Chapter Five (Part 1)

Related

part 2

Chapter Five (Part 2 of 2)

Fortunately for the hungry guests the head chef's announcement that the banquet dinner was ready put an end to the out of tune performance of the monkey pair.

At the long banquet table An Xiao Li bit into a piece of meat that she had no idea what animal it came from, but she thought it was delicious!

'Delicious?' the girl asked.

'Um.' An Xiao Li said and bit another piece of meat.

'I'm Gu Yan, what's your name?' Gu Yan asked.

'I'm An Xiao Li,' An Xiao Li introduced herself.

An Xiao Li extended her arm across the banquet table to shake hands with Gu Yan. An Xiao Li was friendly since she was a kid and was extra friendly toward Gu Yan, because Gu Yan was big boss' little darling.

'Are you Qin Song's girlfriend?' Gu Yan asked.

Based on Chen Yu Bai's reaction to An Xiao Li and Qin Song's passionate stage performance, Gu Yan already knew the answer.

An Xiao Li picked up another meat and was prepared to say no to Gu Yan but the ice glacier spoke on her behalf.

'No!' Chen Yu Bai said coldly.

'Almost!' An Xiao Li lied.

Gu Yan was ecstatic Chen Yu Bai's complexion was ready to paint the room blood red. She waved Qin Song over who was chatting on a sofa with Ji Nan. 'Qin Song, come here. Your girlfriend is looking for you.'

Qin Song wasn't within earshot of Gu Yan, he only saw Gu Yan wave him over. He hopped of the sofa and strode to the banquet table and in his oblivious state he even patted An Xiao Li's shoulder. 'Later let's have another singing session.'

An Xiao Li smiled sweetly. 'I'm full, let's go sing now.'

Gu Yan focused on Chen Yu Bai's half gloomy jilted lover and half murderous expression, it took a lot of will power for her not to laugh.

Qin Song wasn't a fool and quickly realised An Xiao Li was using him to provoke his third brother. He looked back at the sofa he considered as a no man's land and planned his retreat. 'What's that... fourth brother you called me?'

Qin Song wanted to run to the sofa – third brother's expression meant that the ticking time bomb in Qin Song's mouth was about to detonate.

The heavens turned their back on Qin Song, his fourth brother was no different. The smiling assassin Ji Nan walked to the banquet table. 'What? I didn't call you. What's wrong?'

Qin Song's eyes were teary – that heartless fourth brother!

Chen Yu Bai swept his eyes over An Xiao Li, Ji Nan and Gu Yan then he picked up a wine glass and silently left.

An Xiao Li didn't know why but the moment the ice glacier turned his back on her, her heart tightened... like that time when she was a kid she broke her wicked mum's crystal glass swan figurine.

An Xiao Li used Qin Sang to threatened Qin Song. Qin Song's jelly legs wobbled to the stage. He picked up the microphone that by morning would be used for his eulogy. He chose children songs that contained no lovey dovey lyrics to sing to appease his third brother, if he was going to die then he wanted a quick death and less suffering.

Gu Yan shadowed An Xiao Li the rest of the night and laughed happily. Liang Fei Fang was also happy and ordered Chen Yu Bai to bring Chen Yu Bai's little girlfriend to their future gatherings for her to spend time with Gu Yan.

Chen Yu Bai nodded his head to accept his first brother's order and diverted the conversation to punish little Qin Song for daring to encroach on his territory. 'Last time you asked me to research about expanding overseas. Two days ago I finished compiling the research. The likelihood that Liang's company will be able to be competitive in overseas markets isn't high, around the 55% mark. But after having Liang's company branded overseas for a few years then the likelihood of

reaping rewards in the long term is high.'

Liang Fei Fang listened carefully to his third brother's analysis and nodded his head to give the green light. 'That's good. I want you to oversee Liang's company overseas expansion planning and implementation.'

'Um,' Chen Yu Bai accepted his order. The gleam in his eyes behind his glasses became brighter. 'But, the initial expansion in the Middle East will be hard for me. I'm not familiar with the Middle Eastern Royal Families. It'll also take me a long time to understand the business culture in the Middle East in order not to offend powerful households.'

Liang Fei Fang laughed and looked straight through his third brother's transparent eyes. 'You can stay at headquarters and delegate. As for the physical field work, I'm happy for you palm it off to anyone of your choosing.'

Chen Yu Bai pushed up his glasses and laughed coldly. Little Qin Song who had good relations with Middle Eastern Royal Families jumped off the stage after being forced to sing, obviously approached Chen Yu Bai thinking that singing children songs should appease Chen Yu Bai.

'Third brother... hehe,' Qin Song said sweetly.

Chen Yu Bai patted little Qin Song's shoulder. Chen Yu Bai was extra attentive and gentle that it nearly made little Qin Song cry tears before being led to the guillotine. Chen Yu Bai pinched little Qin Song's cheek. 'Your third brother knows you're a good boy.'

But Qin Song didn't know his third brother wasn't a good boy until later, because his third brother wanted to wait for the best opportunity to use the guillotine.

An Xiao Li's female intuition told her that she unintentionally caused strife for both herself and Mr Wild.

Chen Yu Bai's eyes focused on An Xiao Li like a lighthouse emitting a bright light, there was no place for her to hide!

After An Xiao Li met the ice glacier she whole heartedly believed in the saying –

‘if near ink you will be black, if near light, you will shine.’ She shivered when the ice glacier smiled wickedly the moment they left the banquet venue and were alone.

An Xiao Li was ready to leap out of the ice glacier’s car, he pushed his glasses up and stared at her intensely. ‘I...’

‘Look at the time, the security gates of your IT college campus will be locked by now,’ Chen Yu Bai said gently. ‘It’s better if you stay over my place tonight.’

Suddenly An Xiao Li thought about the first night she unintentionally slept on his sofa overnight. Usually after dinner she’d clean his house and he’d be working overtime in his study room. That night it took him longer to finish his workload and she took out a DVD to watch and waited for him to finish and take her home. But she was hooked on the DVD and forgot about her IT college campus’ curfew and ended up sleeping on his sofa for the night.

Since that night An Xiao Li noticed the appearance of new DVDs in Chen Yu Bai’s living room each night. She was someone that forgot the time when watching DVDs and gradually she became acquainted with his living room.

‘I... will stay over at Sang Sang’s house,’ An Xiao Li said softly.

‘Oh? You don’t feel embarrassed knocking on her door at this hour?’ Chen Yu Bai teased.

‘Why would I be embarrassed? I... I... I’m her best friend,’ An Xiao Li stuttered.

‘You wrapped it up and you were ready to give it to me, right?’ Chen Yu Bai asked.

An Xiao Li shrugged her shoulders. Since the ice glacier knew then she wasn’t going to make a big deal out of the matter. In the past many men have used her to get to Qin Sang, adding the ice glacier to the long list was trivial and if he wasn’t added to the list it didn’t dent the long list either.

An Xiao Li felt that she was already too civil toward the ice glacier who used her. She thought she finally met a gold turtle... but that day she saw him and Sang Sang in front of her hometown school canteen. He and Sang Sang sat on a bench in front of the canteen. The bench was long but they sat closely together. His long fingers gently opened Sang Sang’s water bottle and Sang Sang shyly had

her head down. She'd spent more time with him than Sang Sang. She worked for him, fixed his hateful computer, cooked and cleaned his house for weeks... but not even once did he say something nice about her that wasn't a backhanded compliment. The way they toasted their water bottles and laughing together was a picturesque commercial – a handsome man and a beautiful woman side by side under a shady tree and drinking happily together. But at that moment her eyes stung at the perfect live commercial and she carried her loose change back to her wicked mum's house. Miss Chen added another stab to her heart by lecturing her about what a useless daughter she was. Miss Chen's rampage against her flaws lasted a long time. Comparing her to Sang Sang – Sang Sang's beautiful, smart, a heavenly goddess and elegant. She wanted to scream – 'then you should all go ahead and like Sang Sang!'

After the brutal lecture An Xiao Li packed her suitcase, silently left Miss Chen's house and took the earliest bus back home.

Back at home it wasn't that she didn't feel sad and angry. But she calmly thought about each of Sang Sang's strengths. She was dim about many things but she understood what was more important – her friendship with Sang Sang for more than a decade was more important than a man who wasn't reliable or trustworthy. She pushed aside the strange feelings in her heart and decided the right thing to do as a best friend was to unite the two lovebirds. She thought someone like Sang Sang who was a deep thinker was a perfect match for someone like the ice glacier.

'Too bad your matchmaking attempt failed,' Chen Yu Bai said. 'You're always like that, thinking someone else's IQ is higher than yours by forty or fifty. Not right, An Xiao Li, you don't have an IQ.'

'You're smart! You have a high IQ! But wasn't it you who used me to get to Sang Sang? You have nothing to gloat about!' An Xiao Li said. She paused to catch her breath. 'My IQ is not high has nothing to do with you! Who needs you to care? Ah!'

An Xiao Li's rant was silenced.

Chen Yu Bai pushed An Xiao Li back on her seat. He used his lips to silence her lips. She kept her teeth tightly closed but his tongue kept licking her teeth. He

gripped her chin and she was forced to cry out and his tongue made it through the barrier of her teeth. His tongue seized her tongue and when she couldn't breathe she used both her hands to beat his back.

An Xiao Li's hands beat Chen Yu Bai's back a dozen more times than she'd hit a drum with her bare hands. But he didn't let her tongue go. The person that felt sore was her, her hands were like glass hitting against his mountain back.

A patrolling cop noticed a car parked illegally on a road and stopped his patrol car to check what was happening in that car. He saw a man leaned over a girl who sat on the passenger seat and the man was forcefully kissing the girl. He immediately knocked on the driver's window.

The cop knocked on the driver's window to no avail and was forced to walk over to the passenger's side and knocked on the passenger's window.

Chen Yu Bai ignored the intruder and slid his left hand down An Xiao Li's shirt collar. She was lost in his kiss until she was startled awake when she heard someone knocking on her window and immediately bit hard down on his left hand.

Chen Yu Bai was more annoyed at the intruder than having his left hand bitten by An Xiao Li. He momentarily let go of her lips. He took out his phone and locked her back against his chest. He dialled a number, pressed the button to open the passenger window down and gave it to the cop who thought intruding on his private time with her was going to be routine. 'Back off far away and take the call.'

Chen Yu Bai didn't care about the cop's scared look and pressed the button to close the passenger window.

Chen Yu Bai helped An Xiao Li to adjust her shirt but his bitten left hand stroked her collar bone.

'I'm giving you two options. A, we'll finish what we were doing before we were interrupted right here in the car or...' Chen Yu Bai said.

An Xiao Li wanted to protect herself from a public embarrassment and carelessly made a decision. 'I choose B.'

Chen Yu Bai stroked An Xiao Li's hair. 'Good girl.'

An Xiao Li shivered at the sound of his gentle tone more than his usual cold tone.

The cop who finished the phone call gently knocked on Mr Chen junior's window.

Chen Yu Bai opened his window and listened to the cop. 'Mr Chen junior, the chief of police wishes you... a satisfying evening.'

Chen Yu Bai retrieved his phone, pressed the button to close his window, pressed down on the accelerator and his car sped off like a shot arrow.

Chen Yu Bai sped all the way to his house, it was too fast that An Xiao Li didn't know if he ran any red lights. At his house, he dragged her upstairs into his room. He closed the door and turned her around for her back to face the door. His body pressed her body against the door and he kissed her. She tried to push his body off her body until there was no oxygen left in her brain, only regret... she found out the hard way – B, wasn't a good choice.

An Xiao Li thought choice B meant she got to crash on his sofa for the night like the times she fell asleep on his sofa after watching a DVD. But the reality of choice B was that the usually cold Chen Yu Bai was taking off her clothes like a maniac.

An Xiao Li blindly bit Chen Yu Bai's hand.

'Stop biting!' Chen Yu Bai said. 'You're the one that chose B. B is coming to my house to finish what we were doing in my car. Why are you still biting me?'

Chen Yu Bai gripped An Xiao Li's waist. He pulled her white dress down. The white dress she wore all night that revealed too much cleavage and she was flirting with that bastard sixth brother of his. The only vow that consumed him whilst he watched her sing and dance with someone else was that he was going to rip the white dress she wore into one hundred thousand pieces.

An Xiao Li cried out, her hands held her dress that was about to fall against her chest, she slid to the floor and looked up at Chen Yu Bai who was in a burning haze.

Chen Yu Bai's chest throbbed violently. The only thing that turned him on more than a naked An Xiao Li was the half-naked An Xiao Li on the floor in front of him.

He smiled gently but his hands forcefully pulled her up. He lifted her into his arms and carried her to his bed.

An Xiao Li was thrown onto the bed. There were two sayings that appeared in her head at the same time after she fell on the bed... 'to be, or not to be.' The second saying was 'when one door closes, another door opens' – she wasn't deluded enough to believe both sayings were true. Chen Yu Bai's A and B options were both to be and when he closed the door for her, he wasn't going to let anyone else open the door for her.

Chen Yu Bai ripped An Xiao Li's white dress to pieces as he vowed he would.

'Chen-Yu-Bai! Take a good look! I'm not Qin Sang!' An Xiao Li yelled.

Chen Yu Bai's body froze on top of An Xiao Li's body. She felt her heart tightened, of course she wasn't Qin Sang.

'An Xiao Li! You-don't-want-to-live-anymore-right?' Chen Yu Bai asked through gritted teeth. He fisted both his hands, punched hard into the pillow and trapped An Xiao Li's head in between. 'Can you be any more of a dummy?'

'Do you think a person like me who likes someone else would need to use a dummy like you to chase after that someone else?' Chen Yu Bai asked.

'Of course I'm not Qin Sang! If I was half as smart as her I would be thanking heaven and earth!' An Xiao Li said.

'You're really a...' Chen Yu Bai said.

An Xiao Li really thought she truly was too civil and slapped Chen Yu Bai hard.

Chen Yu Bai was shocked. It was the first time someone slapped him.

'Monkey fart! You're a pig head! Whether I'm a dummy or not I would know best! Who needs a passer-by like you that's neither close to me or my enemy to criticise me? Who do you think you are that gives you the right to exploit me and trample all over me? It's you that doesn't want to live anymore! If I didn't take into consideration that you are my debtee than I would have called the cops to report that you assaulted me! Damn it, get out right now!' An Xiao Li cursed.

An Xiao Li kicked Chen Yu Bai hard and he fell off the bed onto the floor. Her naked body was exposed and she pulled the bed sheet over her naked body only

exposing her head. She looked down at Chen Yu Bai who didn't move his position since he fell on the floor.

A long time later Chen Yu Bai crawled onto the bed.

An Xiao Li crawled further under the bed sheet. Chen Yu Bai silently laid next to her like a cotton ball.

On the bed were white pieces of the white dress An Xiao Li wore. Her body was covered by the bed sheet up to her chin and she breathed heavily. Chen Yu Bai who still wore his suit laid next to her and stared at the ceiling.

In Chen Yu Bai's world everything fell into two categories – 1, were things that he needed and 2, were things that he didn't need. He'd fight for what he needed and he'd destroy what he didn't need.

Chen Yu Bai thought An Xiao Li was someone he needed but when angry she was someone he didn't need. But suddenly he realised she didn't belong in his world.

'I don't like Qin Sang. That day I went to your hometown was to kidnap you back here to cook dinner, without you, I'm hungry,' Chen Yu Bai explained.

An Xiao Li forgot everything that happened before Chen Yu Bai said what she wanted to hear – he didn't like Qin Sang, he came to get her back home to be with him and without her, he was hungry.

Suddenly she felt the bed was empty and noticed Chen Yu Bai got off the bed. 'Where are you going?'

Chen Yu Bai swept his eyes over An Xiao Li's half-naked body. There were his kiss marks all over her snow white neck, shoulders and chest. He opened the door to leave. 'I'm going somewhere a passer-by should go.'

End of Chapter Five (Part 2 of 2)

Related

part 1

Chapter Six (Part 1)

Qin Song felt that the atmosphere at his third brother's IT company was off. He took a closer look at his third brother through his third brother's office window. His third brother was cold as usual but there was an odd anger that simmered in his third brother's eyes. He guessed that the anger was aimed at An Xiao Li, but her happy and carefree attitude didn't seem like she was the one that made his third brother angry.

Qin Song smiled charmingly. He took out a wrapped bun from one of his pockets and a coke from his other pocket. 'Hey, my treat for you.'

'Do you know what happens after you eat a bun, drink coke and burp?' An Xiao Li asked.

Qin Song shook his head.

'Your breath will stink like you ate too many onions,' An Xiao Li said.

Qin Song knocked An Xiao Li's forehead. 'You're disgusting!'

An Xiao Li fixed her hair, glared at Mr Wild and bit into the delicious bun.

An Xiao Li nearly choked on her bun, because of the pitiful way Mr Wild slumped on the coffee table and stared helplessly up at her. 'Hurry up and speak. If there's revenge it'll be avenged, if there's resentment it'll be vented, we can talk to each other about it and we'll be able to overturn a tiger.'

'You said you'll help me...' Qin Song sulked. He took back his coke, drank half of it in one gulp and burped. 'I waited on level eight at Qin Sang's work building for two days but she wasn't there.'

An Xiao Li grabbed the coke off Mr Wild but he snatched it back and drank the rest of it in one gulp. He gave her a you-scammed-me look.

An Xiao Li hit her chest, she bit a big piece of the bun and wanted to drink the coke to help her swallow but the hateful Mr Wild drank it all and as a result she was choking to death.

Qin Song laughed at An Xiao Li's choking red look, served her right! But her red face was turning pale... shit! If she choked to death then who'd have insider information about Qin Sang's whereabouts?

Qin Song rubbed An Xiao Li's back but she was still choking. He panicked and whacked her back with too much force and she slumped on the coffee table.

Finally Chen Yu Bai couldn't stand the noisy commotion outside his office and went out to investigate. He found An Xiao Li slumped on the coffee table and her back was shaking. Qin Song was hunched over her, one hand braced the coffee table and the other hand was rubbing her back.

'Ah!' Qin Song cried out. He jumped away from An Xiao Li the moment he saw his third brother. 'Third brother!'

Mr Wild's one whack on An Xiao Li's back helped her to swallow the big piece of bun down her throat, but her back was shaking in pain. She lifted her head and carelessly sulked. 'You hit me too hard.'

Qin Song's whole body turned to jelly at the sight of his third brother's you're-dead-meat look aimed at him. His eyes were teary and he mourned for his bad fate – he was going to be the one sent to the Middle East and he wouldn't be able to see Qin Sang.

Qin Song usually loved to be sent on field work, because he'd get a generous allowance from Liang's company to eat and play. But his third brother wanted him to stay in the Middle East for two months. In those two months someone else would kidnap Qin Sang and he'd want to die.

In the middle of a card session night Qin Song took big sister Gu Yan aside and begged her to ask his first brother to order his third brother to find someone else to go the Middle East for two months.

Qin Song sat back at the card table and Gu Yan convinced his first brother to change his third brother's mind. His third brother considered the option of sending his fifth brother to the Middle East... after a deadly pause his third brother said that there was another field work location that was further away from their district than the Middle East and he would be the prime candidate if

he was unavailable to go to the Middle East.

Qin Song cried a river of tears thinking about the endless possibilities of what remote places his third brother would send him to, it could be anything from a jungle of wild beasts or an icy mountain district that would fossilize his body.

‘Haha...’ Li Wei Ran laughed too much that he dropped cigarette ashes onto his pants. He brushed the ashes off his pants. ‘Here’s money, take it.’

Chen Yu Bai smirked at the sight of Qin Song’s paranoid state. He threw a card face down for Li Wei Ran.

Rong Yan was unlucky all night and vented on Qin Song. ‘Little Qin Song, where did you lose your senses?’

Ji Nan who stood behind Rong Yan laughed at his bad hand of cards. She moved over to torture Qin Song who usually was clean shaven but tonight there was an obvious stubble on his chin. ‘Little Qin Song, do you think it’s your stubble that’s affecting your luck tonight?’

Qin Song glared at the traitor Ji Nan and put his cards face down on the table. ‘Do you want to withdraw a card?’

‘Oh?’ Ji Nan asked. She withdrew a card from Qin Song. ‘Hey, I’ll show you what I learnt from my brilliant famous teacher.’

Qin Song’s stomach was full from anger. He looked over at Gu Yan who was glued to first brother and decided to be amicable and let her play in his stead. ‘If you win you can keep the winnings but if you lose than first brother will pay for you.’

Qin Song stood and backed away from the card table like a proud martial arts champion.

Liang Fei Fang was dragged by Gu Yan to the card table to help her play. He sat behind her and wrapped his arms around her shoulders. He helped her sort out her cards. He saw that she was happy playing and tried to help Qin Song again by seeing if he can get Li Wei Ran who sat opposite to him to volunteer to go instead of Qin Song. ‘Didn’t little Qin Song say something about he found someone he can’t leave behind? Why don’t you help him out and go to the Middle East for him?’

‘He whined to me on the phone earlier today and before I could ask him what he did to offend third brother, he hung up on me. I want to go to the Middle East trip myself, but if I go against third brother’s order it’ll be like going against the heavens’ will,’ Li Wei Ran explained.

Rong Yan shuffled the deck of cards. ‘First brother, have you thought that third brother’s plan of attack is a male’s version of hell hath no fury like a woman scorned? I think this year you’ll need to compensate sixth brother with a giant red packet. Sixth brother will be knocking on desert doors one at a time. It’ll be a miracle if he finished knocking in less than a month. The sixth brother we know is about to grow a beard and his alluring dark eyes will turn sorrowful. His masculine body will wither, especially his waist will become the envy of women.’

Chen Yu Bai laughed at Rong Yan’s mockery of their little Qin Song. ‘Second brother, you’re too flattering.’

Rong Yan clasped his hands and shook his hands in front of his chest. ‘You’re too modest.’

‘I don’t dare to accept such high praise,’ Chen Yu Bai teased at the expense of Qin Song.

‘The right to boast belongs to you,’ Rong Yan teased and added a stab to Qin Song’s flailing pride.

Nearly everyone at the card table fell back onto the chairs laughing hysterically. Qin Song was upset with Ji Nan for causing his losing streak before so he decided to vent on Rong Yan’s legs. Rong Yan easily dodged Qin Song’s feeble kick and counterattacked Qin Song. Qin Song fell back onto the floor and was helpless to do anything else but look up at the ceiling.

Even though Rong Yan lost again he was happy to retire. Li Wei Ran and Chen Yu Bai were bored of Gu Yan’s lack of strategic card playing skills and excused themselves from the card table. Liang Fei Fang and Gu Yan were too busy playing with each other that they didn’t notice anything around them, including Qin Song who laid flat on the floor.

‘I don’t want to go anywhere... you heartless bastards,’ Qin Song mumbled to the ceiling.

An Xiao Li wasn't happy with Mr Wild's miserable mood in front of a plate of fragrant grilled chicken, she thought it was disrespectful toward the grilled chicken's soul.

'If you dare order another chicken, I'll roast you like pig!' Qin Song threatened.

An Xiao Li dismissed Mr Wild's idle threat. She licked her greasy fingers and patted his head. 'Let big sister take a look at you. Oh, if someone heard you they'll be heartbroken for you and if someone sees you they'll shed tears for you.'

'Big sister, help me!' Qin Song begged.

Qin Song let An Xiao Li pull his growing beard on his chin. He didn't have the will to shave since his third brother exiled him.

'You don't owe Chen Yu Bai money. Why do you have to go if he tells you to go?' An Xiao Li asked.

'Because third brother is scary!' Qin Song explained. 'It's your fault third brother wants me to suffer. If it wasn't for you crying out in pain the day you choked on a bun then it wouldn't be so bad for me. I was meant to go to the Middle East next year for two months. But your big mouth got me into more trouble and third brother is sending me off this year and I'll be gone for more than six months.'

'Ok, I'll help you eat dinner with Sang Sang tonight and we'll escort you to the airport too,' An Xiao Li placated.

'That's all?' Qin Song asked.

'It's not that big sister doesn't pity you,' An Xiao Li said. She patted Mr Wild's cheek. 'But my Sang Sang doesn't like you. Even if big sister helps you more, it'll be pointless.'

'You're not going to help me? Are you scamming me?' Qin Song asked.

An Xiao Li punched Mr Wild's shoulder. 'Children shouldn't sprout nonsense.'

'I'm a matured man... if you don't believe me, sleep on my bed and I promise within a week you'll be pregnant,' Qin Song teased.

Qin Song drank his glass of water and felt better.

An Xiao Li pulled Mr Wild's hair. 'You dare?'

Qin Song defended his beautiful set of hair. 'Of course I wouldn't dare. If I dared, third brother will take out a sword and turn me into an eunuch. Speaking of the two of you... what stage are you and third brother at?'

When Li Wei Ran asked An Xiao Li the same question she was incensed. But she considered Mr Wild as a kindred friend and felt she could speak truthfully with him. 'Mmm... at the second and a half base.'

Qin Song smiled slyly. 'Oh? Half a base left? Is it because the bat isn't hard enough? Or is it because the barrier to get to third base is too tight to hit a homerun?'

An Xiao Li almost splattered out the water in her mouth. She swallowed the water and gritted her teeth. 'Do you still want to have dinner with Sang Sang?'

Qin Song suppressed his laughter and put both of his hands up in the air to wave a white flag. 'Ok.'

End of Chapter Six (Part 1)

Related

part 2

Chapter Six (Part 2 of 2)

An Xiao Li was in the middle of having dinner with Qin Sang and Qin Song when her phone rang, it was Chen Yu Bai. An Xiao Li went to a quiet place to answer his call. 'Go find something to eat. I'm having dinner with friends. You can't order me to come to your place to cook for you.'

On Chen Yu Bai's end was silence. An Xiao Li felt triumphant. She realised the only way to defeat a boss was to act like a bigger boss than Chen Yu Bai.

'Where did you put the painkillers for stomach aches?' Chen Yu Bai asked weakly.

'You... have a stomach ache?' An Xiao Li asked gently. 'What did you eat last night?'

'I'm ok,' Chen Yu Bai said. He groaned softly. 'Tell where you put them.'

An Xiao Li gave Chen Yu Bai directions to find the painkillers. She heard draws opening and closing. She imagined his face was pale and sweaty, her heart tightened.

'Um, I found it,' Chen Yu Bai said weakly. He breathed heavily. 'Don't worry, I'm ok. Have fun having dinner with your friends. Be careful on your way back home.'

Chen Yu Bai hung up the phone after he warned An Xiao Li to be careful on her way back home. At first she thought there was no reason to care about him... but then she felt uncomfortable finishing dinner whilst he was alone and sick.

Qin Song elbowed Qin Sang to get Qin Sang to take a look at An Xiao Li. Since An Xiao Li came back to their table after taking a call, she looked lost. An Xiao Li stopped smiling and she didn't touch the fruit platter a waiter brought to their table.

Qin Sang passed the fruit platter to An Xiao Li. 'If something happened at home, you can make your escape.'

An Xiao Li picked up a piece of watermelon with her left hand and a piece of honeydew melon with her right hand. They were fresh but when she put it in her mouth she couldn't taste anything. She had trouble swallowing them and decided she couldn't stay any longer. 'I need to go.'

An Xiao Li picked up her bag and phone. Qin Sang chucked her car keys at An Xiao Li. An Xiao Li caught it and patted Qin Song's shoulder. 'Mr Wild, I'm taking Sang Sang's car home. You have to take Sang Sang home.'

Qin Song smiled and nodded his head. 'If you accidently crash into something on the way home, call me.'

An Xiao Li glared at Mr Wild, lifted up her chin and walked downstairs to drive Qin Sang's car to Chen Yu Bai's house.

An Xiao Li entered Chen Yu Bai's house, it was quiet and she thought Chen Yu Bai must be sleeping in his room after taking painkillers. She changed into slippers and walked to his room to check up on him.

Indeed Chen Yu Bai was sleeping on his bed, his face was bleached white, he laid so still that he looked half dead and he forgot to take off his shoes. An Xiao Li suddenly felt he looked really pitiful.

An Xiao Li knelt, took off his shoes and straightened his legs on the bed. She lifted the bed sheet and covered his body. She loosened his tie and put his arms under the bed sheet.

'Ah!' An Xiao Li cried out. Chen Yu Bai's eyes suddenly opened after she put his arms under the bed sheet. She took two steps back. 'Are you acting in a horror movie? If you were still awake you should have told me. Do you want to scare me to death?'

Chen Yu Bai's vulnerable eyes stared at An Xiao Li for a while. 'I didn't say I was asleep.'

An Xiao Li patted her chest to sooth her heart that throbbed. 'Did you take the painkillers?'

Chen Yu Bai curled his body into a ball under the bed sheet and closed his tired

eyes. 'Not yet.'

Chen Yu Bai's worn out gestures softened An Xiao Li's heart. She wasn't going to argue with a sick person.

An Xiao Li went into the kitchen, cooked congee, searched for painkillers and poured a glass of water. She brought them into Chen Yu Bai's room.

An Xiao Li sat on Chen Yu Bai's bed. 'Are you asleep?'

'Um,' Chen Yu Bai said but he didn't move his body.

'Wake up and take the painkillers,' An Xiao Li ordered. She pulled his body up with too much force, he sat up but he pulled her into his chest so she wouldn't fall off the bed. 'Painkillers.'

'I'm ok,' Chen Yu Bai said. He smiled gently. 'I don't need to take the painkillers... I want to eat you.'

'Your stomach doesn't hurt anymore?' An Xiao Li asked.

'Which one of your ears heard me say I had a stomach ache?' Chen Yu Bai asked.

Chen Yu Bai only asked An Xiao Li where the painkillers for stomach aches were, it was her that assumed he had a stomach ache.

'Let me go. The bed's all wet,' An Xiao Li said.

An Xiao Li accidentally lost her grip on the glass of water and it spilt on the bed.

'It's ok,' Chen Yu Bai said. He kissed An Xiao Li's nose and rubbed their noses together. 'Because later it'll be wetter.'

'Mmm... Chen Yu Bai, listen to me...' An Xiao Li said softly.

An Xiao Li was startled. It was as if Chen Yu Bai wanted to eat her for real.

'Shush,' Chen Yu Bai said. 'You don't need to explain you met up with Song Song in the afternoon, and you don't need to explain why you lied to me and said you went to eat dinner with friends. I know you had dinner with Song Song. But do you remember? I helped you to find Song Song's phone and you promised me you would thank me.'

Chen Yu Bai wrapped one of his arms around An Xiao Li's waist to keep her

against his chest. His free hand that was burning hot slid down her pink cheek, her small chin, her collar bone and one of her soft breasts.

An Xiao Li gripped Chen Yu Bai's hand to stop his hand from sliding further down her body. Her face was bright red. 'I remember, I remember... but I didn't say I'll thank you in this way.'

'You didn't deny... you understood what you promised, accept it,' Chen Yu Bai whispered.

An Xiao Li saw the burning flames in Chen Yu Bai's eyes and it increasingly made her breathing more rapid. She felt a blazing sensation from his palm, her body became limp and motionless.

Chen Yu Bai gently kissed An Xiao Li's eyelid and she felt like she was under his spell. She closed her eyes and he kissed her lips. He nibbled everywhere on her soft lips then his tongue gently licked her lips to seduce her lips open.

Chen Yu Bai was satisfied An Xiao Li consented, his body pressed her body down onto the bed. The burning flames in his eyes burnt more intensely. 'After eating your meat, there's no reason to be scared you'll run around wildly again.'

Chen Yu Bai's breathing was burning hot like his palms and her whole body became completely limp...

After the 'chaotic battle' and 'landslide,' Chen Yu Bai and An Xiao Li were hugging each other, both in a dreamy state and didn't say anything.

An Xiao Li's body was drained and she breathed heavily. She punched Chen Yu Bai's lower back. 'Chen Yu Bai, you're a maniac!'

Chen Yu Bai laughed in a husky tone that was alluring, it echoed in An Xiao Li's ear and made her body tremble and stirred her desire. Their two bodies were very in sync, he could recognise straight away the moment her body was turned on and he chuckled teasingly. 'Oh? Not enough? Ok, let me rest a while. A man and a woman's stamina are different.'

An Xiao Li forced her limp body up and she shook her hand in front of Chen Yu Bai's handsome face. He gripped her wrist and tenderly kissed her hand.

'Are you that impatient? Ok, I'll force my body to meet your demand this time,'

Chen Yu Bai whispered.

Chen Yu Bai's concept of forcing his body to meet An Xiao Li's demand could have turned the bedspread underneath them into a small football field, the forced moves performed were diverse, their bodies changed into various complicated positions, his body's physical strength was supple and his endurance lasted longer than a football match.

Finally An Xiao Li's tired body collapsed on top of Chen Yu Bai's body and her body couldn't move. All the bones in her whole body ached, sleep beckoned her, she gradually became unconscious and her heavy breathing became regular.

Chen Yu Bai gently stretched out one of his arms to grab the bed sheet and cover An Xiao Li's bare back, moved her head onto his chest and let her sleep on top of him. In the dark, his eyes were bright as his smile.

An Xiao Li thought if there was something that caused her to be angrier than having a phone ringing to wake her up then it was the persistent vibrations of a phone.

An Xiao Li squint her eyes, fumbled for the phone and pressed the answer button to take the call. 'Hello?'

'Mmm... is that you Xiao Li?' Qin Song asked suspiciously.

'Nonsense, if you called the wrong number then who are you looking for?' An Xiao Li snapped.

'Mmm... can I inconvenience you and ask you to see if third brother is awake? I'm looking for him,' Qin Song said.

An Xiao Li's anger melted away, she opened her eyes to look closely at the phone she was holding... it belonged to Chen Yu Bai. No wonder it didn't feel like her phone.

Chen Yu Bai lifted his arm that rested on the pillow and reached for his phone that An Xiao Li held. 'What is it?'

Chen Yu Bai saw An Xiao Li rushed to crawl under the bed sheet and he smiled.

'Hehe... hehe... third brother!' Qin Song said and laughed. 'Did you get to eat meat and drink enough?'

‘Enough for now,’ Chen Yu Bai said.

‘Can I inconvenience you to drive third sister-in-law to the airport to send me off?’ Qin Song asked.

‘I know, this afternoon I’ll drive her straight to the airport,’ Chen Yu Bai said.

Chen Yu Bai hung up the phone. He sat up on the bed and pulled the bed sheet off An Xiao Li. Her hair was messy and her face was red like a steamed prawn. ‘Wake up.’

An Xiao Li covered her face. ‘You were awake, why didn’t you answer your phone?’

Chen Yu Bai smiled slyly. An Xiao Li was too angry and embarrassed that she didn’t realised he pulled the bed sheet off her body and she was naked on the bed. He didn’t resist teasing her.

Chen Yu Bai’s palm slid from An Xiao Li’s bare back down pass her waist. She felt another chaotic battle was about to start, but the pain between her thighs made her decide not to give into the wicked ice glacier. She pushed him away from her, grabbed the bed sheet and wrapped it around her body. She jumped off the bed and escaped to the bathroom.

In the bathroom An Xiao Li found her spare set of clothes to change into for work that she usually left in Chen Yu Bai’s living room. Her toothpaste, toothbrush, towel that she brought from home and left it in his living room was also moved to the bathroom – he had moved her belongings from the living room into the bathroom before she arrived to his house!

An Xiao Li felt like Chen Yu Bai had planned everything step by step from the start and everything progressed the way he planned it. It gave her a strange feeling, she was happy and unhappy at the same time.

At the airport’s VIP room was full of people sending off Qin Song. Usually everyone in the room went on business trips on a regular basis and only their assistants drove them to the airport. But Qin Song wasn’t happy to leave the district for six months and wanted to have a lively send off. From early morning he personally called each person in the airport’s VIP room to come send him off.

Chen Yu Bai and An Xiao Li were the last to arrive at the airport's VIP room. She saw Qin Song's shady smile and blushed. She quietly hid behind Chen Yu Bai's back.

Gu Yan noticed An Xiao Li's shyness too. 'Tonight dinner's on me, except for Song Song, everyone else must attend.'

'After dinner will big sister Gu Yan want to play cards too? Call first and second brother to come too, we'll all play cards together,' Li Wei Ran said.

Li Wei Ran patted Qin Song's pitiful back.

Qin Song tucked his plane ticket into Li Wei Ran's shirt pocket. 'Fifth brother, I'm begging you to go instead of me. Whatever you want I'll give it to you. Last time the house that I won from you I'll give it back to you too. Deal?'

Li Wei Ran patted Qin Song's cheeks and Li Wei Ran smiled brightly. 'How much is a house worth? Can it compare to your pitiful state when I video call you six months from your departure date?'

Qin Song charged at Li Wei Ran and punched Li Wei Ran.

Chen Yu Bai felt his two youngest sworn brothers always gave him the most trouble. He led Xiao Li to sit at a sofa away from the two trouble makers.

Ji Nan smiled slyly and pulled Gu Yan to where her third brother and third sister-in-law were sitting to tease third sister-in-law.

An Xiao Li was curious about the mysterious Ji Nan since their first meeting. She felt Ji Nan was a different type of handsome compared to Mr Wild, it was a more feminine handsomeness. Ji Nan wore a black short sleeve shirt that showed off toned arms but lacked meat and the chest size was similar to hers. Ji Nan's jeans looked like the smallest size male jeans, yet it was still loose on Ji Nan. When Ji Nan smiled there was a dimple on Ji Nan's right cheek.

'Third brother, the girl next to you looks familiar,' Ji Nan teased and sat next to Chen Yu Bai.

Gu Yan sat next to An Xiao Li. 'Hi.'

Chen Yu Bai glanced at Ji Nan and leaned back on the sofa. 'An Xiao Li.'

'Hi,' Ji Nan greeted.

An Xiao Li smiled and shook Ji Nan’s hand. ‘Hello Mr Ji. I work for CEO Chen.’

Ji Nan stood and sat in between Chen Yu Bai and An Xiao Li. Ji Nan, An Xiao Li and Gu Yan all gossiped for a while. But An Xiao Li felt it was strange that Chen Yu Bai was pushed aside and didn’t show any reaction.

An Xiao Li stole glances at Chen Yu Bai. He was resting with his eyes closed. Her excited heart slowly turned cold. She felt that his bed wasn’t somewhere she should have impulsively laid on.

End of Chapter Six (Part 2 of 2)

Related

Chapter Seven

Chapter Seven

At a Japanese restaurant the guests that haven't arrived were Liang Fei Fang and Rong Yan. The other guests entered a reserved private function room and took their seats. It was fresh lobster season and Chen Yu Bai ordered a lobster banquet on behalf of the guests.

By the time all the guests arrived, the lobster dishes were brought to the table. In front of each person was a small hot pot and the steam from the hot pot was fragrant. In the middle of the table was a platter of fresh small lobsters that were cut in half. Chen Yu Bai picked lobster pieces and dunked it in An Xiao Li's hot pot and the lobster fragrant made her drooled. When the lobster was half-cooked she used tongs to take the lobster out from the hot pot and dunked it in a bowl of ice water. After it cooled down she peeled off the shell and wrapped the lobster meat with vegetable leaves. In the past she hated eating Japanese cuisine that weren't fully cooked, but the half-cooked lobster meat was extremely juicy in her mouth and tasted delicious.

Chen Yu Bai enjoyed watching An Xiao Li empty her mountain plate of lobster rolls into her mouth.

A waiter came and collected the plates of empty lobster shells in front of Chen Yu Bai and An Xiao Li. An Xiao Li was overwhelmed by the delicious lobster meat that she didn't realised how much she ate until the waiter took away her plates of empty lobster shells. She looked around that table and noticed the other guests only ate one or two pieces of the small lobsters.

Chen Yu Bai draped an arm around An Xiao Li's chair and his hand stroked her hair. When she finally lifted her head and assessed her surroundings that weren't related to her lobsters, he tucked her hair behind her ear and whispered in her ear. 'Delicious?'

An Xiao Li beamed and nodded her head. She thought the ice glacier was alright, he was attentive to her. During dinner he dunked the small lobster pieces into her hot pot but he didn't eat the lobsters.

Chen Yu Bai rubbed An Xiao Li's head and let go. He gestured for the waiters to bring the main course.

Seven waiters brought thirty large cooked lobsters to the table of Chen Yu Bai's group. An Xiao Li stared at the sixty large lobster eyes that mocked her for not saving her appetite for them – they were the main course. Apart from An Xiao Li everyone else applauded the main course, wore disposable gloves provided and dug into the thirty large cooked lobsters.

After Chen Yu Bai wore his disposable gloves, he glanced at An Xiao Li and smiled. 'Why aren't you eating?'

An Xiao Li burped and felt embarrassed. She leaned back on her chair. 'I'm... full.'

'You were full quick. These large lobsters were caught this afternoon and delivered straight here, very fresh. If they go to waste, it'd be a shame. So I'll eat your share too,' Chen Yu Bai reasoned.

Chen Yu Bai moved An Xiao Li's new plate of large lobster pieces closer to him. Both on his left and right were a main course plate of large lobster pieces and he quickly ate from both plates.

'Chen Yu Bai, you trickster!' An Xiao Li accused.

An Xiao Li didn't know whether to cry or sob, Chen Yu Bai wasn't alright, he was a trickster! He was extra attentive to her to make her belly full on the entree course.

Chen Yu Bai didn't deny or admit to An Xiao Li's accusation, he simply shrugged his shoulders and received a you're-a-rotten-egg look from her.

An Xiao Li was both full and angry. She sat straight on her chair. She saw Ji Nan on her left held a peeled large lobster claw in each hand, Ji Nan chewed the lobster meat and cried out it was delicious at the same time. Rong Yan who sat next to Ji Nan, peeled lobster shells and put the lobster meat onto Ji Nan's plate. Liang Fei Feng sat opposite her summoned a waiter to bring a bowl of warm water. Then Liang Fei Fang dipped a white towel into the bowl of warm water, wrung the towel and gently wiped Gu Yan's face with the towel.

An Xiao Li turned her head to face the ice glacier and glared at him.

Chen Yu Bai understood what An Xiao Li was thinking. He rubbed her head and asked a waiter to bring a clean white towel for her.

An Xiao Li thought there was something on her face and accepted the white towel. 'Where?'

Chen Yu Bai pointed to An Xiao Li's head. 'I forgot to take off my gloves.'

An Xiao Li took a deep breath, the ice glacier rubbed her head with gloves stained with lobster poop.

An Xiao Li ran off to the bathroom with the white towel. In the bathroom under bright lights, she looked at her angry face and dirty hair in the mirror.

An Xiao Li understood what the mirror on the wall said to her – 'Chen Yu Bai isn't prince charming. He's a tyrannosaurus rex that is cold blooded, self-centred, wicked and thick skinned.'

An Xiao Li felt regret. She shouldn't have laid on the tyrannosaurus rex's bed impulsively. If her snow white innocence was still intact then the tyrannosaurus rex wouldn't dare to treat her in a despicable manner.

An Xiao Li chided herself, Chen Yu Bai didn't treat her well before she slept with him either.

An Xiao Li gripped the white towel, turned on the tap, wet the towel and turned off the tap. She wrung the wet towel and carefully wiped off the lobster poop on her head.

A knock on the bathroom door interrupted An Xiao Li's cleaning mission. A beautiful young girl in a cleaning uniform walked into the bathroom and her smile showed her dimpled cheek. 'I'm sorry Miss, I need to clean this bathroom. Can you please use a bathroom from a different level?'

An Xiao Li looked back at the mirror and saw her hair was still damp. She turned back to the young girl and spoke in a serious tone. 'Can I decline?'

The young girl's sweet smile became forced. 'Excuse me Miss, I'm begging you to cooperate with my work duty.'

An Xiao Li was fed up with her bad night. 'Please don't call me Miss. I don't think it suits me. You can call me Miss Universe if you insist on calling me Miss.'

The young girl was speechless for a while. 'Miss...'

An Xiao Li threw the towel into the sink and swept her damp hair behind her shoulders. Was she that transparent? Did the young girl know she was eaten and no longer as fresh as the young girl? In her whole twenty years of living she'd never scammed anyone... her life path was meant to be wide. She bypassed the young girl and left the bathroom.

The moment An Xiao Li left the bathroom she bumped into Ji Nan. She smiled at Ji Nan and didn't notice anything unusual. She walked a few steps, suddenly her curiosity was stirred. She turned around and saw Ji Nan... walked into the female bathroom.

An Xiao Li had a revelation, the female bathroom didn't need to be cleaned. The female bathroom was cleared for Ji Nan's exclusive use to satisfy Ji Nan's fetish. She laughed quietly... Ji Nan was corrupt as Mr Wild. She thought that Ji Nan owned good vision, the young girl in the bathroom was suited to be a Miss Universe candidate.

The dinner ended just after nine.

Chen Yu Bai drove An Xiao Li home. At about two or three roads from her home, he asked a question out of the blue. 'What's your take on my fourth brother?'

An Xiao Li put aside the thoughts about her pitiful hair, because she was interested in learning more about the ice glacier's sworn brothers. 'Is Mr Ji your fourth brother?' She met all his sworn brothers but didn't know their rankings. 'Mr Ji doesn't look that much older than Qin Song. You and your sworn brothers... did the six of you rank yourselves by age?'

Chen Yu Bai kept his eyes on the road. 'It was supposed to be by age but it turned out differently.'

'Then how were you ranked?' An Xiao Li asked.

'Fist fight,' Chen Yu Bai said.

An Xiao Li experienced first-hand the ice glacier's physical strength last night... but in the morning at the airport she saw Li Wei Ran and Qin Song fought with their fists and their skilful strikes were as powerful and accurate as professional

fighters. ‘You defeated three of your sworn brothers?’

‘Ji Nan is ranked fifth in the world as a martial arts athlete. Do you think I can beat Ji Nan?’ Chen Yu Bai asked.

An Xiao Li was in awe. The handsome Ji Nan was not only handsome as Mr Wild but was also a world class martial arts champion. Wow! She shouldn’t judge a book by its cover. ‘Did you and Ji Nan have a fist fight? Did you beat Ji Nan?’

Chen Yu Bai pushed up his glasses. ‘I didn’t propose to solve the problem by force.’

Chen Yu Bai left out the part that it was him that initially suggested to his sworn brothers to rank them by force, but changed his mind later after encountering an unexpected problem.

An Xiao Li pouted. She didn’t need to think deeply to know that the ice glacier beat Ji Nan using shady trickery – after he fought Li Wei Ran and Qin Song, he would have been tired to death.

‘Then why didn’t you give yourself the ranking of first brother?’ An Xiao Li asked sarcastically.

‘I can’t win a fight against first brother. Rong Yan... I think the title of ‘second old man of a thousand years’ isn’t flattering to hear,’ Chen Yu Bai explained. He reversed expertly into a carpark. ‘We’re here.’

An Xiao Li was distracted by her curiosity that by the time Chen Yu Bai parked the car, she realised he parked the car outside his house. He got out of the car but she stayed in her seat. ‘I want to go home.’

Chen Yu Bai didn’t say anything. He strode to An Xiao Li’s passenger door and opened the door. He bent down, took off her seatbelt and conveniently pressed the button to lower the passenger seat. He pushed her back on the seat and kissed her lips with a force of a waterfall.

An Xiao Li was dizzy from Chen Yu Bai’s kiss and her tongue cooperated with his tongue, once again she was seduced by his handsome looks.

Monday morning was a morning of a thousand kinds of wickedness.

When An Xiao Li brushed her teeth she realised her arm strength was feeble, but it fared better than her the extreme ache in her waist and the other kinds of aches around her body. She wanted to cover her eyes so she couldn't see the dark circles under her eyes in the mirror. She silently cursed the ice glacier when she saw his refreshed face and his relaxed mood.

An Xiao Li's morning start was full of suffering. But before lunch time she received a text from Qin Sang. Qin Sang invited her out to lunch and to go window shopping. She tidied up her work desk and was prepared to leave five minutes early to meet up with Qin Sang.

Suddenly An Xiao Li felt a familiar cold aura behind her back.

'Are you going to buy lunch?' Chen Yu Bai asked.

'Hehe... I have lunch plans with a friend,' An Xiao Li said.

'Oh? Is that why you're leaving me to starve by myself?' Chen Yu Bai asked.

Usually at work An Xiao Li ordered two lunch dishes to be delivered to Chen Yu Bai's office. He hated to waste time eating outside so they sat opposite each other in his office and silently ate the delivered lunch dishes. 'I called for a bowl of noodles to be delivered to you already.'

'Who wants to eat noodles?' Chen Yu Bai asked coldly.

An Xiao Li felt regret. She regretted she didn't leave ten minutes earlier.

'Wait for me a bit, we'll go together,' Chen Yu Bai said and he strode to his office.

An Xiao Li slumped over her tidy work desk helplessly. Her relaxing afternoon plans with her best friend turned into a party of three that included the wicked ice glacier.

End of Chapter Seven

Related

part 1

Chapter Eight (Part 1)

‘The number you have dialled is currently busy...’ the operator said.

An Xiao Li anxiously waited for another twenty minutes, and pressed the call button again for the thirteenth time but she still couldn’t get through.

When Chen Yu Bai entered the bedroom, he saw An Xiao Li sprawled on the bed. Her hair was messy like a crazy person and she continuously pressed the call button on her phone.

‘Is there something urgent? Why are you redialling? Chen Yu Bai asked.

Chen Yu Bai comfortably tidied the pillows, bedspread and bed sheet that An Xiao Li left cluttered on the bed.

‘I don’t know... in the morning Sang Sang asked me to call her every twenty minutes after nine tonight. She said even if she doesn’t pick up I need to keep calling her number every twenty minutes until she gets home,’ An Xiao Li explained.

An Xiao Li was someone who always kept her promises. She called Qin Sang’s number again but lost track of how many times she called Qin Sang.

Chen Yu Bai finished putting the pillows back to its original position, apart from An Xiao Li there wasn’t any clutter left on the bed. ‘Don’t call anymore.’ He didn’t want to explain why, but he saw her anxious look and didn’t feel comfortable. ‘Today is Wei Ran’s birthday, Qin Sang is with him.’

An Xiao Li wasn’t impressed with Li Wei Ran. She couldn’t believe he broke the brotherhood code and made his moves on Qin Sang whilst Mr Wild was overseas. How was she supposed to explain to the adorable Mr Wild that his fifth brother was a scumbag?

An Xiao Li rolled over to jump off the bed but Chen Yu Bai pulled her back on the bed. ‘Where are you going?’

‘To find Sang Sang. If she and Li Wei Ran are doing it, then what about Qin

Song?’ An Xiao Li said.

‘Oh? It seems like you care a lot about Qin Song,’ Chen Yu Bai said coldly.

An Xiao Li felt a gale swept passed her and in her head she pictured she was going to be disciplined until she was unconscious. She faked a sweet smile. ‘No, no, no! Not true, not true!’

Chen Yu Bai’s smile was wicked – the bone crunching and meat gnashing kind of wicked. ‘Is that so?’

Chen Yu Bai’s voice was gentle but his grip on An Xiao Li’s wrist tightened.

‘Don’t come any closer...’ An Xiao Li pleaded.

The rest of An Xiao Li’s plea was swallowed by Chen Yu Bai’s mouth.

Chen Yu Bai was in the mood. He punished An Xiao Li with his whole body and interrogated her about Qin Song at the same time. He whispered eloquent words in her ear at leisure, but when she listened carefully she heard the repressed desire in his tone. His form of punishment fogged her head that she couldn’t even remember who Qin Song was.

The more An Xiao Li didn’t answer his questions the more intense he punished her. She trembled and begged him at the same time. She said the words that he liked to hear. Finally she couldn’t withstand his punishment anymore, she refused to talk and she cried.

Chen Yu Bai realised he was too impatient, he hastily bent his head and kissed An Xiao Li and slowed his body movements.

An Xiao Li vaguely realised something, once she started something she couldn’t stop. Her crying gradually became louder, her tears flowed nonstop and on the pillow there was a wet patch of her tears. Suddenly she felt the wicked ice glacier was different to how he was on their first night. The ice glacier tonight kissed her like gentle raindrops, he coaxed her gently nonstop and gradually each of his body movements became gentler.

‘Ok, don’t cry anymore. Xiao Li, Xiao Li... don’t cry,’ Chen Yu Bai whispered.

Chen Yu Bai always called An Xiao Li by her full name. Tonight was the first time she heard him called her by her first name lovingly.

‘Don’t cry...’ Chen Yu Bai whispered nonstop.

Chen Yu Bai stopped his movements and withdrew from An Xiao Li’s body. The two of them laid on the bed face to face and he gently coaxed her to stop crying.

‘In the future... you’re not allowed to call me a dummy anymore,’ An Xiao Li said.

‘Um,’ Chen Yu Bai promised.

Chen Yu Bai was shocked that for the first time in his life he made a promise to someone without thinking.

But after Chen Yu Bai promised An Xiao Li not to call her a dummy in the future, she really stopped crying. She hugged his arm and slept. The bedroom was quiet and he only heard her soft even breathing. Each sound of her breathing made his heart trembled uncontrollably.

That night Chen Yu Bai realised, everything was not within his expectations. He thought he was taking care of a loveable pet but unexpectedly An Xiao Li didn’t eat what he gave her. In reverse she took a bite of his heart... he was ensnared really badly.

On the hottest day of June.

An Xiao Li pulled up her graduation gown and used it to fan her face. The graduation gown was baggy but she still felt hot wearing it. She took some photos with Xuan Tu and Mac, but the hot weather was too unbearable that she hid under a large shady tree on a roadside.

Qin Sang sat under the same shady large tree. She leaned against the tree, closed her eyes and rested.

An Xiao Li poked Qin Sang’s cheek and laughed a shady laugh. ‘Last night did you go fruit stealing?’

Qin Sang kept her eyes closed, stretched out an arm and fumbled for An Xiao Li’s arm. Qin Sang found her target, pinched hard and An Xiao Li whimpered in pain.

An Xiao Li stopped whimpering and assessed Qin Sang’s expression. Qin Sang

was grinning and it gave An Xiao Li goose bumps. 'Qin Sang, if you don't want to tell me, it's ok. But there's no need to grin in a scary way that gives me goose bumps. Fess up, you and Li Wei Ran what stage are the two of you at?'

'At the moment not at the same stage as you and Chen Yu Bai,' Qin Sang teased.

Qin Sang teased An Xiao Li's weakness and An Xiao Li retreated, she didn't dare continue poking the bear. An Xiao Li felt lucky that their classmates called them over to take more photos and used that opportunity to avoid being grilled by Qin Sang.

In the meeting room at Liang's company, Mr Li junior was reporting a new work plan at an incredible speed.

During the meeting most of the employees were curious why Mr Li junior kept looking at his watch but didn't dare to ask. The meeting finished half an hour early.

The moment the meeting ended, Li Wei Ran didn't bother packing up his documents, took out his car keys and wanted to bolt. But his third brother swung a chair around and lifted a leg to prevent him from leaving. He dodged his third brother's annoying leg easily. 'What is it? I'm in a hurry!'

'Why are you in a hurry? You didn't take care of the main business!' Rong Yan scolded. He leaned against the meeting table. 'I won't mention your sloppy work attitude but you whirled through the PowerPoint slides like you were battling. What got into you that got you all worked up?'

'Today is my girlfriend's graduation day. It's about to start, of course I need to hurry. Brothers, go easy on me this time. Later I'll come back and explain the new work plan properly with everyone,' Li Wei Ran pleaded.

Rong Yan wasn't satisfied, he pulled Li Wei Ran back and Li Wei Ran wrinkled his forehead.

Li Wei Ran punched Rong Yan's chest and Rong Yan released him. Li Wei Ran wanted to deflect the attention off him and targeted Chen Yu Bai. 'Third brother, Xiao Li is graduating today too. Aren't you going to go to her graduation?'

‘What game are you two playing? Are you two holding a class of beautiful girls captive? Did you two at least save one girl for me?’ Rong Yan teased.

Usually between the Liang’s sworn brothers there was no need to hold back or hide anything. But Chen Yu Bai suddenly stood and whacked Rong Yan’s mouth with the documents in Chen Yu Bai’s hand. Rong Yan didn’t dare to tease an offended Chen Yu Bai and hurriedly packed up his own documents. Rong Yan laughed helplessly with Li Wei Ran. ‘I’m not free, if you want to go then hurry up and go.’

‘Huh?’ Li Wei Ran asked.

Li Wei Ran thought Rong Yan’s work schedule for the day was light after the meeting ended and didn’t know why Rong Yan wasn’t free.

Chen Yu Bai watched Li Wei Ran bolt in the direction of the carpark but Chen Yu Bai walked in the opposite direction.

Chen Yu Bai thought about the dummy’s graduation. It seemed like the past few days she mentioned about it and in the morning when she requested a day off she mentioned it again. Did she hope he would attend her graduation?

Chen Yu Bai felt he needed to think it over carefully what direction he wanted to take things. He thought that everything was progressing outside his initial expectations.

An Xiao Li was jealous of the way Li Wei Ran and Qin Sang interacted with each other. Qin Sang was usually cold and liked to boss her around. But the moment Li Wei Ran showed up at their graduation, Qin Sang blushed red, grabbed Li Wei Ran’s arm and smiled happily. She could clearly see Li Wei Ran and Qin Sang’s close bond... unlike the distant bond she had with someone who was missing on her graduation day.

Xuan Tu and Mac sweetly greeted Li Wei Ran but on the inside they were vomiting blood. They both thought what was wrong with the world? Their dummy friend An Xiao Li caught a rare specimen and even the wicked Qin Sang was able to catch a handsome and mature man who was friendlier than An Xiao Li’s boyfriend. But what about themselves? They were both pure and gentle

Cinderellas, yet they were both single.

Xuan Tu and Mac didn't dare to threaten the wicked Qin Sang. They kept smiling sweetly at Li Wei Ran until he invited them for a meal. There was an unspoken tradition that if one of their classmates found a new love interest then that taken classmate needed to treat the single classmates to an expensive meal to formally announce the start of a new relationship.

Li Wei Ran was mesmerised by Qin Sang's smiles and her leaning happily on his arm. 'Of course, it'll be my honour. After the graduation ceremony I'll treat everyone to a feast.'

An Xiao Li stood quietly on the sidelines. Li Wei Ran tried to cheer her up with a smile, but she turned away and pretended she didn't see anything.

The graduation ceremony at the IT college was running smoothly. All the graduates formally received their certificates. The Chancellor spoke eloquently on behalf of the IT college about how the future of their society rested on the shoulders of the new graduates and that they all needed to contribute to their society to the best of their abilities. The Chancellor didn't forget to encourage the graduates to contribute a generous donation to the IT college if they were successful after graduation.

An Xiao Li wasn't one of the new graduates that listened attentively to the Chancellor's speech so she wasn't brainwashed into making a generous donation to her former IT college if on the off chance she had a successful career. She was too deep in jealousy. She noticed how Li Wei Ran who sat next to Qin Sang was a dutifully attentive boyfriend. He used his handkerchief to wipe sweat off Qin Sang's face. Qin Sang was embarrassed and tried to avoid his handkerchief but he pulled Qin Sang closer and Qin Sang was forced to oblige.

An Xiao Li who sat behind the lovebirds couldn't stand the lovey dovey Li Wei Ran anymore. She gritted her teeth and hit hard on Li Wei Ran's shoulder. 'Stop mucking around. You moving about wildly is an eyesore.'

Li Wei Ran turned around and gave An Xiao Li another pity smile. Qin Sang wasn't as sympathetic, she turned around and glared at An Xiao Li to warn An Xiao Li not to mess with Li Wei Ran.

Mac who sat next to An Xiao Li and was playing with her phone, coldly exposed

An Xiao Li. 'Is him moving about wildly making you jealous?'

An Xiao Li pinched Mac's arm hard. An Xiao Li's heart felt clogged. The past few days she gave subtle hints to Chen Yu Bai to come to her graduation but in the end he didn't come. An Xiao Li seeing Li Wei Ran and Qin Sang acting lovey dovey to death made her angry on behalf of Mr Wild and also she was jealous.

An Xiao Li wondered if Chen Yu Bai just wanted to play around with her. But if that was the case why did he choose her? A man like him could have any type of girl, all he needed to do was wave a hand.

An Xiao Li wasn't certain Chen Yu Bai was serious about their ambiguous relationship. If he was serious then why didn't she feel happy being with him? Apart from the times they were in bed together, she'd never seen him treat her well.

An Xiao Li blushed, Chen Yu Bai didn't treat her well in bed either. He'd always bullied her in bed too.

'Hey, why are you blushing?' Xuan Tu asked. She shook An Xiao Li's shoulder. 'Oh... look over there, isn't that the Vice-Chancellor?'

The Vice-Chancellor stood in the middle of the isle searching for someone. Qin Sang knew the chancellor was looking for Li Wei Ran and waved to the Vice-Chancellor. She stood and pulled Li Wei Ran up. They both made their way through the end of their row to greet the Vice-Chancellor.

An Xiao Li saw the Vice-Chancellor led Li Wei Ran and Qin Sang near the stage where the Chancellor sat. An Xiao Li could see the Chancellor's wide grin when he greeted Li Wei Ran from where she was sitting. Li Wei Ran introduced Qin Sang to the Chancellor. Afterward Li Wei Ran... made an inspiring speech on behalf of Liang's company and the female graduates in the audience applauded wildly. An Xiao Li was shocked, Liang's company was the biggest benefactor of her former IT college. After Li Wei Ran and Qin Sang came back to their seats and sat down, An Xiao Li hit Li Wei Ran's shoulder with less force than before. Li Wei Ran smiled at An Xiao Li and mouthed two words – 'Gu Yan.' An Xiao Li understood straight away that Gu Yan must have been a former student too and that was why Liang Fei Fang authorised a generous contribution to her former IT college.

Li Wei Ran kept his promise and treated Qin Sang, An Xiao Li, Xuan Tu and Mac to a dinner feast at a restaurant after their graduation ended.

At a bar table of the restaurant An Xiao Li drowned her sorrows and flooded her bladder. She staggered to the bathroom and relieved her bladder. On her way back to the bar table she took a wrong turn and exited the restaurant instead.

Outside the restaurant An Xiao Li realised the night sky darkened and the streets were bright and lively. There were many young couples on dates. The young men all held their girlfriends' hands and smiled sweetly whilst walking along the streets. The lovey dovey sight made her heart bitter... she realised she was unhappy the whole day.

'Are you waiting for your husband?' Qin Sang teased.

An Xiao Li turned around and saw Qin Sang stood behind her. She must have been lost in her thoughts and didn't know how long Qin Sang stood behind her. She pouted her lips. 'Who says I have a husband? It's obvious I'm still waiting for my prince charming to gallop over a high mountain to find me here.'

In the past An Xiao Li used to ask Qin Sang why she didn't want to fall in love, Qin Sang always joked – 'I'm waiting for my prince charming to ride on his horse to me. He has to gallop over a high mountain and swim through a deep river that's why he'll come a little late.'

Qin Sang reminisced and remembered she said the same thing to An Xiao Li in the past. They both quietly contemplated for a while. Then Qin Sang pinched An Xiao Li's cheek. 'Your prince charming needs to change his horse. His horse's galloping speed is too slow.'

'Um,' An Xiao Li said. She pulled Qin Sang back to the restaurant. 'These days there are too many men masquerading as a prince charming that's why the roads are clogged.'

An Xiao Li and Qin Sang re-joined the boisterous crowd of drinkers. After a while An Xiao Li didn't feel like drinking or eating anymore and took a taxi home.

Back at home, indeed An Xiao Li was still not the type that stayed angry at

someone long. She took out her phone and called Mr Chen junior.

‘Little Bai! Little Bai? Little Bai...’ An Xiao Li said.

‘What is it?’ Chen Yu Bai asked coldly.

An Xiao Li wasn’t surprised that even from a distance Chen Yu Bai’s cold tone could turn her flushed tipsy face cold. ‘Hehe... where are you?’

‘In bed,’ Chen Yu Bai said.

An Xiao Li looked up at the moon through a window. The more she looked at the moon the more it became rounder. ‘Oh? What are you doing in bed?’

‘In bed,’ Chen Yu Bai said.

‘Oh,’ An Xiao Li said and hung up her phone to continue admiring the round moon.

Less than a minute later An Xiao Li’s phone rang. She answered the phone, it was Chen Yu Bai. ‘An Xiao Li, you dare hang up on me?’

‘Aren’t you busy in bed? I don’t want to intrude, it wouldn’t be polite,’ An Xiao Li said.

‘Dummy... where are you?’ Chen Yu Bai asked.

‘At home,’ An Xiao Li said.

‘Wait for me,’ Chen Yu Bai said,

‘Oh...’ An Xiao Li said. She smiled and hung up her phone.

Chen Yu Bai smiled and hung up his phone. He got off the bed and chose an outfit from his cupboard.

End of Chapter Eight (Part 1)

Related

part 2

Chapter Eight (Part 2 of 2)

The swish-swoosh and splashing sounds of water stopped before Chen Yu Bai knocked on the bathroom door.

‘I’m leaving now,’ Chen Yu Bai said coldly.

Chen Yu Bai drove to An Xiao Li’s home. When he arrived he stayed in his car and called her. He waited for a while before he saw her went flying downstairs whilst looking at him. On the last step, she lost her footing and tumbled to the ground.

A gentle wind swept by and leaves fell to the ground onto An Xiao Li. Chen Yu Bai sighed, got out of his car and stepped toward her. He held her shoulders and pulled her up.

‘You’re really a dummy,’ Chen Yu Bai said gently and helped brushed dust and leaves off An Xiao Li.

An Xiao Li cried out when she stood after knocking her foot on the last step of the stairs. Chen Yu Bai helped her stand steadily. Then he knelt down and checked her legs and feet for injuries. He didn’t find any scraped skin but her knees were red and dusty. He blew the dust off her knees and took out his handkerchief to gently wipe the dust off her knees. He stood and knocked her head. ‘You don’t even watch where you’re walking.’

An Xiao Li was giddier than usual. Chen Yu Bai bent his head and sniffed her breath. He raised his eyebrows. ‘Did you drink?’

‘Yes,’ An Xiao Li said. She nodded her head and without thinking blabbed more. ‘Sang Sang pressured me.’

Chen Yu Bai pushed his glasses up and didn’t say anything. He silently recited Qin Sang’s name and smiled coldly. He’d deal with Qin Sang later.

Chen Yu Bai and An Xiao Li walked around her former IT college. The lamp posts lit amber lights onto the footpath and all the young couples who were walking on the footpath created a romantic atmosphere. There were large trees

in between the lamp posts. The cool wind rustled the tree leaves. It was a refreshing night after a hot day.

Initially Chen Yu Bai pulled An Xiao Li's wrist and walked along the footpath. She felt that he was taking her for a stroll so she walked beside him and touched his hand. He realised what she wanted and held her hand and they walked side by side.

An Xiao Li silently walked with Chen Yu Bai for a while and couldn't stand the silence. 'Before were you really in bed?'

An Xiao Li thought that Chen Yu Bai was joking with her before but wasn't certain so she asked.

'No,' Chen Yu Bai said.

'Oh,' An Xiao Li said.

An Xiao Li ran out of conversation starters. She went back to walking silently with Chen Yu Bai. He was the usual handsome ice glacier under the amber lights. It could be that she was tipsy but she felt that he was more distant with her than usual like he was... cagey?

Chen Yu Bai and An Xiao Li walked for a long distance. When they wanted to go back to her home, she was tired and lazy. She nagged him and pulled his arm for him to piggyback her. He sighed and lowered his back. 'Get on.'

An Xiao Li felt happy on Chen Yu Bai's back. She sang and mumbled nonsense in his ear. He looked into the distance and smiled. He let her be because she was being herself.

'Little Bai, what's in your heart?' An Xiao Li asked.

Chen Yu Bai piggybacked An Xiao Li for a long time before he saw the college gate. She pinched his bright red ear and asked him the same question but he still didn't answer her.

An Xiao Li sighed. 'Little Bai, you always don't say anything. If I was smart like Sang Sang it'll be good, because each day I won't need to guess what you're thinking.'

At the college gate, Chen Yu Bai let An Xiao Li come down from his back. He

adjusted her wrinkled shirt and saw that she was a tipsy dummy. He couldn't hold back and pulled her close to him, bent his head and bit her lips.

In the past An Xiao Li felt that the crude couples who kissed in front of the college gate ruined the scenery. But tonight she understood being a crude couple had its own charm.

'Don't be smart like Qin Sang. I don't like a girl who's smart like that,' Chen Yu Bai said.

An Xiao Li heard someone ushered the students to go back to their rooms then she noticed the couples around her were separated. But what Chen Yu Bai said to her sounded like it came from a faraway place.

That night despite Mac's snoring, An Xiao Li grinned in her sleep and had sweet dreams.

The next day was An Xiao Li's last day living at the college. Xuan Tu and Mac found jobs at a different district. Qin Sang drove to the college and picked them up to go to the port. Qin Sang and An Xiao Li said their farewells to Xuan Tu and Mac before they boarded their ship. Afterward Qin Sang and An Xiao Li went back to the college and collected An Xiao Li's luggage.

An Xiao Li did look for new accommodation but her monthly salary from the ice glacier was bare minimum. If she rented a house then she'd need to survive on one packet of noodles each day. But she heard that the ice glacier's IT company offered affordable accommodation for their unmarried employees so she filled out an application. Before her application was approved, Qin Sang offered her temporary stay at Qin Sang's house.

Qin Sang drove An Xiao Li to Qin Sang's house. When they were cleaning Qin Sang's house, An Xiao Li's phone rang. It was Chen Yu Bai, he didn't greet An Xiao Li but asked her where she was.

'I requested to take leave for today already,' An Xiao Li said.

An Xiao Li felt it was strange, yesterday she told him she had plans for a whole day and that was why she wasn't at work.

Chen Yu Bai was waiting below An Xiao Li's room and the secret glances he received from the female students around him got on his nerves. He gritted his teeth. 'I know. I asked you where you are now.'

'At Sang Sang's house. I'm staying here temporary until my application is approved then I'll move out,' An Xiao Li explained.

Qin Sang wanted An Xiao Li to stay at Qin Sang's house longer. But An Xiao Li understood Qin Sang's non-human nature and knew that if she stayed for a long time it'd affect their friendship and neither of them would feel comfortable around each other anymore.

During An Xiao Li and Qin Sang's first year of college, Qin Sang stayed with her, Xuan Tu and Mac for a week before Qin Sang quietly moved out. An Xiao Li explained to Xuan Tu and Mac that Qin Sang wrote at night and didn't want to disturb their sleep. But An Xiao Li noticed that each time she, Xuan Tu and Mac joked around and laughed, Qin Sang would leave the room because Qin Sang wasn't comfortable being overly-friendly with others.

Occasionally An Xiao Li thought that was a sign of Qin Sang's vulnerability – Qin Sang was scared of being hurt that was why Qin Sang locked herself in a vase and let the world believe that Qin Sang was a resilient person.

An Xiao Li was in a daze looking at Qin Sang cleaning around the house. It wasn't until she heard the disconnection sounds of her phone that she realised she was talking on the phone with Chen Yu Bai.

An Xiao Li felt like a third wheel when Li Wei Ran dropped by Qin Sang's house. An Xiao Li put up with their lovey dovey husband and wife role play and held back her jealousy until Li Wei Ran left.

Qin Sang helped An Xiao Li cleaned the guest room for An Xiao Li. Then they laid on the bed in the guest room to rest.

'I feel that Li Wei Ran is a good man,' An Xiao Li said.

'Um,' Qin Sang said.

An Xiao Li rolled her body and laid her head on Qin Sang's stomach. 'I'm

jealous.'

'Xiao Li,' Qin Sang said. She pushed An Xiao Li off her and closed her eyes. 'The different kinds of love are boundless.'

'I want the kind of love that you and Li Wei Ran have,' An Xiao Li said.

'Um,' Qin Sang said.

'Prince Chen isn't that kind... but he's compatible with you. But if you want you can find someone else, I could be wrong,' Qin Sang said.

'Qin-Sang!' An Xiao Li cried out and pulled her own hair.

'I'm not an immortal. How am I supposed to know what will happen in the future? Back then I felt that he was compatible with you,' Qin Sang said.

'Now that you got a taste of sweet love, you know that he's not the mature and honest man for me,' An Xiao Li said.

'Um... the truth is I thought about the same thing,' Qin Sang said. She opened her eyes and brushed An Xiao Li's messy hair. 'But after I'm hurt from loving Li Wei Ran, I'll think differently. That's why Xiao Li, it depends on the circumstances. Love, isn't it just going with the flow?'

An Xiao Li pressed her face against the pillow and thrashed on the bed like a dead fish. 'Qin Sang, you're an erotic writer, why make yourself out to be philosophical? It's cheesy to death.'

Qin Sang grabbed a pillow and pressed it down on An Xiao Li's neck to let An Xiao Li suffocate. 'Aren't erotic writers human too?'

At night Li Wei Ran came back to Qin Sang's house to drive Qin Sang and An Xiao Li to eat dinner at a restaurant.

An Xiao Li was in awe of the unique restaurant. She sat with Qin Sang and Li Wei Ran in a small private room. The air conditioner was turned on and the steam from the hot pot floated up her nose. The goat meat slices were cut thinly like paper. She dipped a slice of goat meat in sauce and gobbled it. Then she drank water that was set at thirty-seven degrees. At first her body was cold then it turned hot, the goose bumps on her body came and went three times, it was

an extremely refreshing sensation.

The refreshing sensation didn't last long for An Xiao Li, because she was a third wheel again. Li Wei Ran and Qin Sang were feeding each other the goat meat in a sickening way whilst talking about their day.

'Today were you still busy planning the next six months work schedule?' Qin Sang asked.

'Um, another two weeks and I'll be done. Then I'll go to third brother's IT company,' Li Wei Ran said.

'Oh? Why?' An Xiao Li interrupted the lovebirds' conversation.

'It'll just be a standard rotation in management. It won't affect any employees,' Li Wei Ran explained.

'What will happen to my co-workers and my current CEO?' An Xiao Li asked.

Li Wei Ran passed a napkin to Qin Sang and carelessly answered An Xiao Li's question. 'Are you asking about third brother? At Liang's company third brother's decisions are prioritised first, he's the one that delegated the work plans to me. Didn't he say anything to you?'

'Hehe... he told me already. Of course he did, he tells me everything,' An Xiao Li lied.

Li Wei Ran felt that An Xiao Li's tone was strange. He turned to Qin Sang and saw Qin Sang shook her head so he didn't ask anything else.

The more An Xiao Li ate the more the goat meat tasted colder like her heart. Perhaps, it was the same feeling as the female lead in one of Qin Sang's novels.

Heartache, monkey fart! An Xiao thought if she didn't need the ice glacier anymore, it'd solve her heartache.

An Xiao Li ate until her belly was a balloon. She burped and her eyes were bright with decisiveness.

End of Chapter Eight (Part 2 of 2)

Related

part 1

Chapter Nine (Part 1)

Li Wei Ran drove Qin Sang and a tipsy An Xiao Li back to Qin Sang's house.

A tipsy An Xiao Li behaved well after she stopped pestering Qin Sang to sit in the backseat with her instead of on the passenger seat next to the nine tailed fox prince. Even in her tipsy state she wasn't blind to the lovey dovey couple in front of her. It made her more determined to see through her heart's decision.

An Xiao Li comforted her heart – 'I'm going to see it as I'm unlucky. I didn't look carefully what was under the ice glacier prince's white shirt. Under his white shirt is an incomparable dark black heart... so my heart, pretend you never fell for him.'

An Xiao Li moped in the backseat. She looked out at the bright streetlights and felt her heart didn't listen to her, it still ached. It didn't matter that all the streetlights were bright in the district, she felt there wasn't a single light that sincerely wanted with all its heart to shine because of her.

Li Wei Ran saw his third brother parked in front of Qin Sang's house.

'Oh, Xiao Li, your little Bai has come to find you,' Li Wei Ran teased and parked his car.

Li Wei Ran grinned remembering how Qin Sang gave him a good ammunition to tease his third brother when she told him about An Xiao Li's endearing nickname for his third brother – 'little Bai.'

Li Wei Ran's grin turned into a soft chuckle remembering that morning he took his third brother down a notch...

That morning Chen Yu Bai led a meeting to report new financial profit and loss statements. He smugly singled out Li Wei Ran. 'I've got to hand it to you fifth brother, you have an uncanny ability to cause the profit and loss to rise and fall sporadically for any project under your care.'

'You praise me too much... little Bai,' Li Wei Ran teased and laughed.

Rong Yan who was seriously looking over the financial statements whilst drinking coffee, splattered the coffee in his mouth onto the financial statements and coughed nonstop after he heard Li Wei Ran dared to call their scary third brother 'little Bai.'

Liang Fei Fang was reading a newspaper but lifted his head in disbelief when he heard his fifth brother dared to call his third brother using an endearing nickname. He gave Chen Yu Bai a kiddo-it's-about-time-you've-fallen look.

Ji Nan who was sleepy, yawned but became alert to join her fifth brother to tease their third brother too. 'Hehe... little Bai.'

Li Wei Ran didn't want to stay behind and receive his third brother's scrutiny and quietly bolted out of the meeting room.

Ji Nan took the fall for her fifth brother. 'Little Bai' gave her a dagger that made her weary all morning and didn't dare to make a sound.

Since that morning Chen Yu Bai's sworn brothers stopped calling him 'third wise old man' or 'third brother.' They purposely called him 'Chen Yu – Bai' with the emphasis on the pause before Bai to show him that they wholeheartedly supported his endearing nickname – 'little Bai.'

Poor tipsy An Xiao Li didn't know that her former pet name 'little Bai' for Chen Yu Bai made him a little less scary in front of his sworn brothers.

An Xiao Li got out of Li Wei Ran's car and she saw Chen Yu Bai in front of Qin Sang's house. She could see his unhappy look from a distance. She bit her soft lips hard. He saw her from the distance too and his eyes behind his glasses were ablaze with anger.

The moment An Xiao Li was within hearing distance, Chen Yu Bai put out his hand. 'Phone.'

An Xiao Li held back the intimidated feeling that his icy aura evoked. She shrugged her shoulders. 'I don't have my phone on me.'

Chen Yu Bai helplessly pulled back his hand. 'Do you know how many times I called you?'

'I don't know. I told you I didn't bring my phone, how would I know? You know

I wouldn't know. So can you not purposely ask me questions you already know the answers to?' An Xiao Li said in a serious tone.

'An-Xiao-Li!' Chen Yu Bai said.

An Xiao Li lifted her chin and smiled triumphantly. There wasn't a speck of fear left of that ice glacier who stood furious in front of her. 'Um. What?'

In that moment An Xiao Li believed since there was no love between her and the ice glacier then she believed there was no fear left to be scared of offending him.

Chen Yu Bai wasn't intimidated by An Xiao Li's coldness. He was just angry. He was angry from morning to the afternoon. At dinner time he waited for a long time and didn't see her come to his place, it made him angry and he called her. But she didn't answer her phone! He ordered one of his assistants to go find her. His assistant reported back to him that she was eating dinner with Li Wei Ran in the eastern side of the district. The moment he heard she chose to eat dinner with someone else rather than eat dinner with him made the anger in his stomach burn intensely.

When Li Wei Ran walked arm in arm with Qin Sang toward the silent and unmoving duelling pair having a staring contest, his curiosity was stirred.

'Oh, how many wooden dummies have we got here? One or two?' Li Wei Ran teased.

In Li Wei Ran's life one of the sights he loved to see most was when his third brother's cold mask was taken off. His third sister-in-law had the rare gift of being able to take off third brother's cold mask easily – his third brother's usual indifferent face was red with anger.

Chen Yu Bai glared at Li Wei Ran. 'None of your business. Scram upstairs now.'

Li Wei Ran took a step back. 'Sang Sang, I'm really scared!'

Qin Sang defended Li Wei Ran at the expense of An Xiao Li. 'Chen Yu Bai, you really don't understand the situation. If you want to be loved by my big sister Xiao Li then you need to take care of her little sister and her little sister's boyfriend too. Oh, one more thing, my big sister Xiao Li before dinner purposely left her phone on the coffee table at home.'

It was obvious to Li Wei Ran and Qin Sang the moment Chen Yu Bai stopped breathing and when Chen Yu Bai's long fingers curled into two fists. Li Wei Ran and Qin Sang held each other's shaky hand and wisely escaped the menacing battle that was about to be unleashed.

It was almost the end of Autumn, the night wind was cool.

When Chen Yu Bai's cold hand gripped An Xiao Li's chin, her whole body broke out in goose bumps. She turned away from him because she didn't dare to look straight into his eyes.

'Why are you angry with me?' Chen Yu Bai asked.

An Xiao Li shivered at the sound of Chen Yu Bai's sudden gentle tone. They stood outside in the cool night, under amber lighting and beside his Audi R8 – she finally realised she was faced with the situation 'dead within a minute' like what was described in a romance novel.

An Xiao Li commanded her shivering body to snap out of it – 'Wake up! If you get past this minute then up ahead there'll be a prince charming on his horse ready to pick you up. If you can't get past this minute then you can only cry miserably that you're nothing more than a toy in the ice glacier's heart. If he beckons then you have to appear in front of him and if he dismisses you then you need to disappear straight away. A toy has a short shelf life, wait until the ice glacier is bored of playing with a toy – you'll lose all your money and your whole body too!'

'It's nothing,' An Xiao Li said. Her body stopped shivering. 'I've graduated, I'm an adult and I can't be deluded forever. I want to start a new life.' She looked straight into Chen Yu Bai's eyes. 'Chen Yu Bai, whatever ambiguous connection that we have between us, from this minute, I hope that our only connection will be that of a simple boss and employee connection.'

Chen Yu Bai listened to each word Xiao Li said. He couldn't hold back and laughed coldly. 'Hope? An Xiao Li, I'm letting you know, another person's hope is to be carried out and your hope is to be destroyed.'

An Xiao Li felt guilty before for saying those heartless words to Chen Yu Bai. But after she heard him throw back heartless words to her, all the guilt she felt was gone. She followed his lead, she laughed even colder. 'Is that so? Then I

wholeheartedly hope that as each day passes you'll get to live a better life.'

An Xiao Li saw the veins on Chen Yu Bai's hands and face popped up, his eyes were narrowed and he didn't say anything and it made her more frustrated. 'Do you have anything else to say? If not then I'm going inside.'

Chen Yu Bai didn't have any reaction. An Xiao Li pouted her lips and turned around to leave. Suddenly his hand pulled her right arm back and she used her strength to shake off his hand on her right arm.

Unexpectedly An Xiao Li's shake worked. Chen Yu Bai let go of her right arm, lost his balance and rammed into the side of his car.

An Xiao Li was shocked. She saw Chen Yu Bai wrinkled his forehead and thought the collision must have really hurt. Her heart pounded rapidly again.

'Hey...' An Xiao Li said. She stepped toward Chen Yu Bai and checked if he was injured anywhere. His complexion wasn't good and it made her panicked. 'Do you have a stomach ache? Didn't you eat dinner?'

Chen Yu Bai snorted and opened his eyes wide.

An Xiao Li's suspicion that colliding into a car would hurt. She experienced it first hand – her body was pushed against the car and indeed it did... really hurt.

Chen Yu Bai pulled An Xiao Li to him. He gripped her waist and turned her back to face the car then he pushed her against the car. He felt her soft body against his body. The wind swept her long hair into his face and he closed his eyes.

Chen Yu Bai opened his eyes and lifted An Xiao Li's chin for her to face him. Indeed the cold drops he felt on his shoulder were her tears.

'What's there to cry about?' Chen Yu Bai scolded.

Chen Yu Bai's threatening tone made more of An Xiao Li's tears stream down her cheeks. Her pitiful state made his anger disappear.

'Don't cry anymore,' Chen Yu Bai pleaded. He sighed and gently wiped her tears. His hands were wetter by the second and his tone was gentler by the second, which was hard for him to understand why. 'Can you not cry anymore? Ok?'

'Ok... Xiao Li, don't cry anymore,' Chen Yu Bai said gently.

Chen Yu Bai used one arm to hug An Xiao Li and used his other arm to reach through the open car window. He took out some tissues and patiently wiped her tears.

‘You...’ An Xiao Li said in a choked voice. Her nose was red from crying. ‘You’re always like this. Always ice cold like a dead person. Then occasionally you’ll be resurrected once in a while... But, I can’t continue to relive those fleeting moments that you’re resurrected and accept the long periods when you’re an ice cold dead person.’

An Xiao Li’s tears blurred her vision, her voice sounded helpless and she pushed his hand away from her face. Then she used both her hands to carelessly wipe her face and by habit she wiped her hands on Chen Yu Bai’s shirt.

Chen Yu Bai didn’t understand everything An Xiao Li said but he understood the general meaning of her words. She... was blaming his flaws to reject him.

‘In the past I thought a prince was someone like you, who’s handsome and personality isn’t one hundred percent good that’s why no matter how you bully me I could put up with it. But the reality is you’re not a prince... the way Li Wei Ran treats Sang Sang is really good. I admire Sang Sang, I also want to find someone who will treat me really good.’

An Xiao Li’s tears gradually stopped. Her dark eyes cleared after crying and became bright. Under the night sky, she seriously said out loud her deepest desire, she wanted a love that wasn’t tiring and to live a beautiful life.

Chen Yu Bai didn’t remember what age he started to understand that emotions weren’t something that could easily be expressed as taking money out. For many years he believed in the saying ‘still waters run deep.’ So in that moment that he faced an An Xiao Li that seemed like she sprouted a pair of brave wings behind her back, he suddenly realised one strange concern relating to her – he was envious of her.

Chen Yu Bai felt it was a raw envy enough for him to want to possess her and slowly torture...

An Xiao Li thought that she cried too much and was hallucinating, because it seemed like Chen Yu Bai became gentler and his tone sounded a lot warmer.

‘I haven’t bullied you,’ Chen Yu Bai said.

An Xiao Li suddenly snapped. ‘As if you haven’t. I don’t like cooking but every day you deliberately choose complicated dishes. You’re always cold and sarcastic toward me, you’re very aggressive... you don’t allow me to do this and that... you never smile gently with me like Li Wei Ran smiles with Sang Sang. You don’t respect me, you force me... anyway... I don’t want you anymore.’

An Xiao Li was both angry and tongue-tied. Usually she felt Chen Yu Bai treated her badly in a thousand different ways. Why was it when she was given the chance to say the truth, she could only remember the trivial ways he treated her badly?

As An Xiao Li expected, Chen Yu Bai dismissed her trivial complaints. ‘If what you call treating someone good is like fifth brother then there’s no solution – how can you be smart as Qin Sang?’

Chen Yu Bai pushed An Xiao Li’s most forbidden button – since she was a kid to adulthood, she hated to hear the most when someone compared her to Qin Sang and said she wasn’t smart and beautiful as Qin Sang.

‘What about you? How can you compare with Li Wei Ran who is gentle, warm and an outstanding jade amongst a forest?’ An Xiao Li asked.

‘What about you? How can you compare to Qin Sang who has insight and can understand another person’s intentions?’ Chen Yu Bai asked.

‘You!’ An Xiao Li cried out.

‘What?’ Chen Yu Bai asked.

Chen Yu Bai laughed coldly and leaned one of his arms on An Xiao Li’s head. His eyes looked like a triumphant kid.

An Xiao Li was angry like a provoked green frog croaking. ‘Is that so? Then there’s nothing left that can be solved. Let’s break up!’

‘What are you thinking? You still owe money, do you want to default?’ Chen Yu Bai asked.

‘I’m defaulting! What can you do to me?’ An Xiao Li said.

An Xiao Li was angry enough to elbow Chen Yu Bai’s stomach. He groaned and

put an arm on the car to steady himself.

Chen Yu Bai's complexion was gloomy. He gritted his teeth and stared at An Xiao Li's retreating back. He silently vowed – 'An-Xiao-Li, wait for it!'

End of Chapter Nine (Part 1)

Related

part 2

Chapter Nine (Part 2 of 2)

After the showdown with the ice glacier, An Xiao Li was unusually free.

Qin Sang started to find a day job and the free An Xiao Li shadowed Qin Sang. If An Xiao Li saw there was a free vacancy that matched her qualifications at one of the companies Qin Sang applied then she'd also applied too.

An Xiao Li's limited IQ warned – 'Your life is precious. Stay far away from the wicked ice glacier. If you can find a better job than his IT company, don't hesitate and accept the better job. Then you can arrogantly kick him into the sky.'

An Xiao Li's limited IQ forgot to warn that in reality the sky is too high for a pauper like An Xiao Li to kick the almighty wicked ice glacier into the sky by herself. Her plan was to find surveillance evidence and get a witness statement from someone who was at the scene of her ill-fated car crash with the ice glacier on the first day they met.

That was why An Xiao Li was happy to see the nine tailed fox prince came to visit Qin Sang at Qin Sang's house the same time An Xiao Li concocted a genius plan with her limited IQ. But the nine tailed fox prince was a traitorous fox and his girlfriend the wicked witch was also a traitor!

On Qin Sang's sofa, Qin Sang and Li Wei Ran sat on one end and An Xiao Li sat on the other end to rally their help to wipe off her debt she owed the ice glacier that way he'd be out of her life for good.

'How do you want us to help you? Do you want us to find someone to rough up Chen Yu Bai?' Qin Sang teased. She assessed An Xiao Li's reaction. She smiled after she received a dagger from An Xiao Li. 'Why are you glaring at me? You don't have the heart to see him be beaten to a pulp?'

'Whoever doesn't have the heart is a little dog!' An Xiao Li denied.

An Xiao Li tugged both Qin Sang's shirt sleeve and Qin Sang's heart. An Xiao Li really needed to enlist Qin Sang and Li Wei Ran's help to get rid of all the evidence relating to the car crash.

Li Wei Ran realised his third sister-in-law was getting worked up, he did pity his third sister-in-law but he didn't want to get on his third brother's bad side. He wanted to stay as Switzerland, because he wanted to live a long life and have a family in the future with Qin Sang. He quietly left the life threatening sofa in case his third brother punished him for getting involved in third brother's relationship with third sister-in-law.

'Xiao Li, wake up and smell the roses. The connection between you and Chen Yu Bai has nothing to do with the evidence you're searching for,' Qin Sang reasoned calmly. 'Who is Chen Yu Bai? Even without the evidence in his possession, he can still tie you to him. Think about it, does someone like him need the petty cash you owe him? Why he's using the money you owe him to get you to spend time with him, doesn't your heart know clearly why?'

An Xiao Li pouted her lips. 'Of course I know. I'm not a dummy.'

It was Qin Sang's turn to glare at An Xiao Li. Why did she waste her breath reasoning with a dummy?

'He wants to keep me by his side. But he hasn't given me any long-term commitment or formally acknowledges me as his girlfriend. He's always so rough with me, I don't like it. That's why I want to get rid of the evidence and cut off our connection. What right does he have to use me as his toy?' An Xiao Li explained.

'What sort of toy are you?' Qin Sang teased.

'I'm not a toy!' An Xiao Li cried out.

Qin Sang nodded her head. She was satisfied the dummy woke up and smelt the roses. She stood and left the living room to find where Li Wei Ran escaped to.

It took An Xiao Li longer to absorbed everything she said before she realised she was doomed.

The following day at Chen Yu Bai's IT company, he wasn't surprised An Xiao Li stood at his office door smiling at him like a fresh rose when it was home time.

‘CEO Chen, have you finished work for the day?’ An Xiao Li asked sweetly.

Chen Yu Bai nodded his head. He stood, picked up his jacket and briefcase in one hand and put the same hand out in front of An Xiao Li. She understood and walked to his work desk and carried his jacket and briefcase. Then she followed him to his car.

On the way back to Chen Yu Bai’s house, he and An Xiao Li stopped by the supermarket to buy ingredients to cook dinner. He only needed to point at what ingredients he wanted and she’d risk her life to battle for all kinds of fruits and vegetables on sale that were held captive in the hands of middle-aged women.

Chen Yu Bai stood on the sidelines with the trolley. He smiled whilst watching her wedge between crowds of women and wrestling for the fruits and vegetables that he chose, which coincidentally was on sale.

In Chen Yu Bai’s kitchen that night, An Xiao Li put in a lot of effort to cook fragrant dishes of all colours of the rainbow. Whilst cooking she smiled and made a promise to the evidence – ‘hehe... wait for me. After dinner I’ll come free us both from the ice glacier.’

At the dining table, An Xiao Li’s smile was as bright as the lighting above the dining table. She happily watched Chen Yu Bai eat two bowls of the dishes she cooked and she felt her efforts weren’t in vain. She picked up more food and put it into his bowl. ‘You need to eat a lot more.’

An Xiao Li scooped Chen Yu Bai a bowl of soup and passed it to him. She spoke to him in a tone that was gentle as the still soup. ‘Is it delicious?’

Chen Yu Bai took a sip of the bowl of soup An Xiao Li cooked. He kept his voice steady. ‘What do you think?’

‘Hehe... I think it’s delicious,’ An Xiao Li lied.

‘Um. It proves that your tastebuds and your cooking skills are as poor as each other,’ Chen Yu Bai teased.

‘Then why are you eating so much?’ An Xiao Li snapped.

Chen Yu Bai coldly gazed at An Xiao Li for a while then he bent his head to sip more mouthfuls of the bowl of soup. ‘I used my money to buy the ingredients for

you to make these dishes. How can I let it go to waste? I'm seeing it as training my tolerance for suffering.'

Chen Yu Bai saw the way An Xiao Li was holding back her tongue and giving him secret deadly glances. He swallowed the rest of the soup and he grinned.

After dinner, An Xiao Li rushed to wash the dishes and tidy Chen Yu Bai's house. Chen Yu Bai didn't say anything and brought his work papers into his study room.

Inside Chen Yu Bai's study room, he heard sounds of draws closing and shutting. He looked at his watch and thought that it was nearly time for An Xiao Li to come search his study room.

Ten minutes later there was a knock on Chen Yu Bai's door. 'Mmm... your study room, I need to clean it. If you want to look over your work papers, can you do it in your room while I clean?'

Chen Yu Bai saw An Xiao Li's flushed face from searching his house outside his study room. She tied her hair up in a ponytail but there were loose strands from overexerting herself. 'Ok.'

An Xiao Li felt strange hearing the familiar seductiveness of Chen Yu Bai's tone when he easily agreed to let her 'clean' his study room.

The moment Chen Yu Bai left his study room, An Xiao Li locked the door. She searched high and low. She started by lifting the carpet, moved onto searching each draw and flicked through each book. Finally she climbed onto his chair and she searched on top of the shelves.

An Xiao Li sighed. She stood on the chair and panicked, she couldn't find the evidence anywhere.

'Found it yet?' Chen Yu Bai teased.

An Xiao Li was startled the ice glacier stood below her in his study room that she locked. She lost her balance and pitifully fell off the chair and onto the carpet.

Chen Yu Bai did brace An Xiao Li's waist to ease her fall but he let go of her waist when she leaned back close to the floor. She still cried out in pain even

though he didn't let her fall straight from the height of the chair.

'You... why didn't you stop me from falling?' An Xiao Li asked.

An Xiao Li rubbed her sore bottom. She wanted to scold the ice glacier. He obviously could have stopped her from falling. Why did he let go of her waist and still let her fall?

Chen Yu Bai knelt on the floor beside An Xiao Li. His fingers stroked her collar bone and he gave her a wicked smile. 'You're going to be laying underneath me anyway. This way it'll spare us some energy for...'

'Don't... ah...' An Xiao Li cried out.

An Xiao Li dreamt a rope tied her body. The more she struggled the more the rope tightened and the more uncomfortable she felt. She panicked when the rope was too tight and she was startled awake.

An Xiao Li saw through the slightly opened bedroom window that the night sky was dark, the room was humid and the bed was messy like after a chaotic battle. Chen Yu Bai hugged her tight against his chest.

An Xiao Li felt hot and wanted to turn on the air-conditioner. She gently lifted Chen Yu Bai's arm around her waist. He was woken up by her gentle movement. He pulled her back into his chest and hugged her tighter.

'I'm hot,' An Xiao Li said and rubbed her eyes.

'Oh,' Chen Yu Bai said and stretched an arm to turn on the air-conditioner.

The moment the air-conditioner blew cold air, Chen Yu Bai mumbled it was too cold. He picked up the bed sheet off the floor, wrapped it around An Xiao Li's body and he snuggled the wrapped An Xiao Li.

The wrapped An Xiao Li laid her head on Chen Yu Bai's chest. His chin gently rested on her head and his arms held her waist tight. She listened to his even breathing and in her drowsy state she felt that it seemed the night's atmosphere gradually became tranquil.

In the morning Chen Yu Bai's complexion wasn't of someone who was refreshed and he didn't eat much of his breakfast. But An Xiao Li didn't think

much of his changed mood from last night.

After breakfast Chen Yu Bai drove An Xiao Li to work. On the way to work Qin Sang called her phone and grilled her. 'Last night you didn't come home, right?'

An Xiao Li blushed red and diverted Qin Sang's question. 'Um. Hehe... is there a reason you're looking for me?'

Chen Yu Bai glanced at An Xiao Li's embarrassed look then he looked back on the road.

Qin Sang laughed slyly. 'I'm letting you know I'm visiting my parents today. You... feel free to make yourself comfortable at my house while I'm gone.'

'Oh,' An Xiao Li said.

'This time don't you think that it's convenient you're staying at my house? You get to use my facilities fully with someone else,' Qin Sang teased.

'Qin-Sang!' An Xiao Li cried out.

'What about me?' Qin Sang asked.

'You little bitch. After another two days staying at your house I'll be moving out. That means Li Wei Ran, your nine tailed fox prince will have a place to feel free to eat your meat!'

'OMG, I've been waiting for that moment to come for a long time!' Qin Sang teased and laughed wildly.

An Xiao Li hung up on the wicked witch.

'You got permission to move into the accommodation facilitated by work?' Chen Yu Bai asked coldly.

'Huh? Oh, not yet. I'm going to ask the beer belly old man if my application was approved,' An Xiao Li said carelessly in her dazed state.

Chen Yu Bai snorted coldly.

An Xiao Li glared at Chen Yu Bai. 'If you have something to say then say it. What's so good about snorting?'

'Who needs you to care?' Chen Yu Bai asked coldly.

‘Who wants to care about you?’ An Xiao Li asked in cold tone too. ‘I just want the lines to be clearly drawn between us. It’s best that we don’t have to associate with each other outside of work till death.’

An Xiao Li saw that the ice glacier gripped the steering wheel too tight, because the veins on his hands popped up and her mood was lifted. ‘Also, starting from tomorrow I’m not going to your house anymore. The money I owe you, go ahead and half my monthly salary. I’ll pay you back slowly.’

‘I don’t agree,’ Chen Yu Bai said.

‘Then you don’t need me to pay you back? Oh, you’re such a good person!’ An Xiao Li said sarcastically.

An Xiao Li saw the ice glacier’s complexion was gloomy. She realised to deal with a non-human, she needed to bully him in an effective way.

Chen Yu Bai parked the car at his IT company. He turned off the engine and sat still on his seat. ‘An Xiao Li, are you itchy?’

An Xiao Li heard the serious tone in Chen Yu Bai’s question, it gave her goose bumps and made her scared.

But An Xiao Li’s fear radar and limited IQ didn’t cooperate together. ‘Why is it that you give me the feeling that I’m your toy?’

Chen Yu Bai’s threatening tone lessened a bit because he was surprised at An Xiao Li’s intuition. He turned his head to look at her. ‘Isn’t that right?’

‘I don’t know either. You never tell me anything. It’s always me guessing about what you’re thinking. Guessing if you like me or not. Finally it’s all too confusing for me. I even have to guess back and forth what my own heart is feeling. Right now I’m tired. Chen Yu Bai, tell me the truth clearly. Do you like me or not?’ An Xiao Li said calmly.

An Xiao Li suppressed her shyness and her fear of rejection. She exchanged her pride for the sake of hers and Chen Yu Bai’s future, it was the last chance she was giving him.

Chen Yu Bai creased his forehead and looked at An Xiao Li as though he didn’t understand what she said.

‘You say I’m a dummy. I admit I’m not smart. That’s why I can’t guess your heart, I need you to tell me for me to know. But I’m not enough of a dummy to let you trample all over me in all sorts of ways. Either you tell me clearly or we can breakup from this moment. The money I owe you, I will repay it all but I won’t be strung along by you anymore,’ An Xiao Li said in a serious tone.

Chen Yu Bai heard An Xiao Li’s sincere words that sounded both reasonable and vulnerable. She gave him the option to either progress with her or retreat from her. He felt that in his life it was rare for anyone to deeply move him like she did.

A few years later, on a rainy morning. Chen Yu Bai was startled awake by the heavy rainfall. He saw the last two pages of a romance novel were left open on the pillow. He picked up the novel to put it on the bedside table, but his eyes were drawn to the words on the last two pages. He gritted his teeth whilst he read it. Then he punished his little wife who was sleeping soundly on his chest. He punished her for daring to recite the words from the last two pages of a romance novel she owned to deeply move him a few years ago!

‘You... what to you want to hear me say?’ Chen Yu Bai asked.

An Xiao Li silently said to Chen Yu Bai’s heart – ‘Little Bai’s heart. It’s best you tell little Bai to obediently listen to me. It’s the last chance I’m giving little Bai.’

‘You know,’ An Xiao Li said.

Chen Yu Bai fell into a state of speechlessness.

An Xiao Li quietly waited, she held her breath and looked into Chen Yu Bai’s cold eyes. Her heart gradually became cold.

It was almost the official work start time for the day, many employees walked passed their CEO and An Xiao Li who sat still in the CEO’s car. They were curious but didn’t dare to idle because they didn’t want to be late for work.

An Xiao Li’s cold heart sighed. She opened the car door and didn’t hesitate to leave.

End of Chapter Nine (Part 2 of 2)

Related

Chapter Ten

Chapter Ten

In the afternoon when An Xiao Li appeared at her work cafeteria, she felt that she was the focus of her co-workers' pair of eyes. The reason was since she started working, it was the third time she ate at her work cafeteria. The first time she ate at the cafeteria was before Chen Yu Bai took over the IT company. The second time he was in one of his moods, he asked her to go to the cafeteria and select lunch meals for them to eat in his office.

Wherever there were females, then there'd be little groups of women huddled together. Whether it was going shopping or going to the bathroom, females travelled in groups. At work was no exception. In the cafeteria there were many tables where similar types of females sat in a group together at their unspoken designated table. When An Xiao Li's female co-workers saw her carrying a tray of food, they stopped gossiping and stared with contempt at their CEO's alleged lover.

An Xiao Li thought the reason why she ostracized by her female co-workers was all the wicked ice glacier's fault. She was a friendly and loveable female – for her eating alone was too pitiful.

'Little sister Xiao Li!' a deep voice called.

When An Xiao Li considered being thick skinned to join Lisa's group for lunch, she heard a familiar male's voice called her. It was Wang Qi, he was waving at her from the table he sat at near a window.

An Xiao Li felt deeply grateful and didn't know what to do. She hesitated for a while then she stepped toward Wang Qi's table. The table was full of smiling men from the Design and Programming Department.

'Hi everyone,' An Xiao Li greeted warmly.

The men at Wang Qi's table reciprocated An Xiao Li's warm greeting. She lowered her head to act shy. Inside her heart she was silently laughing happily up at the sky – 'hehe... this is what's called living out young days beautifully. It's a

world where each day is joyful!’

But whilst eating An Xiao Li’s refreshing lunch break was tainted, because she remembered what happened before lunch. At her work desk the intercom flashed and she professionally answered the call. Chen Yu Bai also used a professional tone. ‘An Xiao Li, come into my office.’

An Xiao Li wasn’t scared. She stood straight, held her chin up and walked into Chen Yu Bai’s office.

Inside Chen Yu Bai’s office, An Xiao Li saw him sat at his work desk with his arms crossed and he coldly looked at her. On his work desk was an unopened lunch box. If she dismissed his cold aura, he looked like a kid who was throwing a tantrum and refused to eat lunch.

‘Where are you going?’ Chen Yu Bai asked too calmly.

An Xiao Li memorised all of Chen Yu Bai’s distinct cold tones, when he spoke too calmly it meant he was about to have an angry outburst.

An Xiao Li stayed standing straight. ‘Eating lunch.’

Chen Yu Bai’s stormy eyes gradually calmed and he spoke in a gentler tone of voice. ‘Why aren’t you eating lunch with me?’

‘I want to avoid any further scandals about you and me in the office so I decided in the future I’ll not eat with you anymore,’ An Xiao Li said in a serious tone.

Chen Yu Bai put the lunch box aside and smiled coldly. ‘I don’t agree.’

‘I’m not asking for your opinion,’ An Xiao Li said coldly too.

‘An Xiao Li, you need to know your limits,’ Chen Yu Bai said. He tossed the lunch box accurately in the bin. ‘Don’t think you can climb over me and sit on top of my head.’

‘I have no interest with your head,’ An Xiao Li said. She lifted her chin and pretended she wasn’t scared. ‘But if you don’t like the lunch box from that store then tomorrow I’ll order a lunch box from another store.’

Work ended half an hour ago but An Xiao Li stayed back and slowly tidied her work desk whilst listening to any sounds from Chen Yu Bai's office.

An Xiao Li was worried that in the morning Chen Yu Bai didn't eat much, he threw his lunch box in the bin and she didn't see him come out of his office after lunch. She was worried about his stomach... her heart mumbled to let him deal with the consequences of his actions for a thousand years, but she couldn't stop worrying unless she went into his office to check on him.

Inside Chen Yu Bai's office, he sat in front of his work desk and looked at An Xiao Li like she was an uninvited guest that intruded his office. An Xiao Li gripped the appointment book in her hands and was glad she was prepared before entering his office. 'CEO Chen, I need to go home, this is your work schedule for tomorrow.'

An Xiao Li put the appointment book on Chen Yu Bai's work desk.

Chen Yu Bai lifted his chin and smiled teasingly. 'When did you start caring about me to this extent?'

An Xiao Li wasn't happy. She pressed a hand down on the appointment book. 'I just came inside your office to see if you died yet. Are you satisfied?'

Chen Yu Bai leaned back on his chair. He looked into An Xiao Li's eyes and he felt disconcerted. 'You're worried about me?'

'You have a rich imagination,' An Xiao Li said and turned around to leave his office.

Behind An Xiao Li's back she heard a banging sound. She turned back around. She saw Chen Yu Bai hunched over his work desk, one hand propped himself on his work desk and the other hand pressed against his stomach. He looked like he was in pain.

An Xiao Li's heart tightened. She knew Chen Yu Bai's stomach wasn't good, the erratic weather changes didn't help, she'd seen him often scrunched his face to endure the pain then he'd swallow painkillers... she was frustrated with herself for running back into his office.

An Xiao Li helped steady Chen Yu Bai to sit on his chair and in her panicked state she called him by his pet name, which revealed their closeness. 'Little Bai?'

Chen Yu Bai heard An Xiao Li called him by her pet name for him and even though he was in pain it didn't stop the smugness from shining brightly in his eyes.

An Xiao Li was confused whether Chen Yu Bai smiled because he was scared she was worried about him or he was pretending he was in pain and smiled to mock her that he fooled her.

Chen Yu Bai looked down at An Xiao Li who knelt below his chair to steady him to sit on his chair. There was a rare strange look in his eyes and he spoke in a rare tender tone of voice. 'An Xiao Li, you're worried about me.'

An Xiao Li felt furious.

But before An Xiao Li made a sound, Chen Yu Bai held the back of her neck with one hand and gently pulled their heads closer together. He gently kissed her lips. In the past when they were affectionate, he'd never been gentle with her to that extent.

If it was last week – An Xiao Li would have been intoxicated and captivated by Chen Yu Bai's gentleness.

Unfortunately that 'if' didn't happen last week so An Xiao Li used her strength to push away Chen Yu Bai who kissed her gently in an intoxicating way.

An Xiao Li rubbed her sore bottom. She used her strength to push Chen Yu Bai away because she knew she could easily succumb to his power of persuasion. She pointed at his tensed body sitting on the chair and scolded loudly. 'Don't think that you can use your handsome looks to seduce me every time!'

Chen Yu Bai laughed coldly. 'Last night I let you eat too full, right?'

An Xiao Li was choked with anger. She stood, turned around and strode to the door. Chen Yu Bai chased after her and pulled her arm back.

'Let go!' An Xiao Li ordered.

'Not letting go,' Chen Yu Bai said calmly. 'The woman that Chen Yu Bai has his eye on, for him there's no such thing as letting go of her.'

An Xiao Li struggled to get out of Chen Yu Bai's hold. He held her against his cold chest and adamantly held onto her tight.

‘Don’t be noisy,’ Chen Yu Bai said. Finally he was able to secure An Xiao Li against his chest. He used one hand to hit her not too hard and not too light on her bottom. ‘Be good for me.’

An Xiao Li’s bottom was hit but she didn’t understand why. Suddenly she could only smell Chen Yu Bai’s body and she slowly stopped struggling against his chest.

‘What you want to hear... I can’t say it,’ Chen Yu Bai said gently. He bent his head and rubbed his cheek against An Xiao Li’s cheek. ‘Because I’m not certain that’s why I need time to think about it and be decisive. I can only say... right now and for a long time in the future, I need you to be beside me.’

At that moment An Xiao Li didn’t know that the ice glacier of Liang’s company was infamous for his heartless cold blood and he never gave into anyone else before.

‘Mmm... how long?’ An Xiao Li asked suspiciously.

Chen Yu Bai comfortably rested his chin on An Xiao Li’s shoulder and continued to rub his cheek against her cheek. All his anger was trivial in that moment. ‘I don’t know... you just need to be good and stay by my side.’

An Xiao Li’s heart interpreted everything Chen Yu Bai said to her word by word – ‘He doesn’t know if he loves you. He needs time to think about whether he loves you or not. During this time, perhaps it could be as long as ten years but until he doesn’t need you anymore he wants you to stay by his side.’

An Xiao asked her heart to elaborate – ‘Then what happens after time passes? If at that time he realises everything he felt in the past was just an illusion, will I become someone who is tossed aside?’

An Xiao Li’s heart ached – ‘No, unless he loved you before he tossed you aside, you didn’t have any claim on his heart and that’s the fate you need to accept.’

Chen Yu Bai was enjoying holding An Xiao Li quietly against his chest, suddenly she pushed him hard. He stumbled back against his work desk and stared at her in disbelief. ‘An-Xiao-Li!’

An Xiao Li’s eyes stung but she forced herself to smile. ‘Chen Yu Bai, you’re truly the definition of a bastard!’

Chen Yu Bai's eyes became icy. He pressed a hand on his stomach and he felt his body slowly weakened. He couldn't hold back the pain on his face.

'Didn't you hear the story about the boy who cried wolf, right? Can you not use the same trick over and over again to fool me?' An Xiao Li asked.

An Xiao Li gave Chen Yu Bai a condescending look for continuing to fake a stomach ache. She turned around and left his office without looking back.

The moment Chen Yu Bai heard his office door was closed, his face turned pale and he kept staring at the spot she stood before she left and slowly his body fell down onto the floor.

The following morning, An Xiao Li woke up early to shower and brushed her teeth. She changed into a casual outfit and happily walked downstairs to change her shoes. On her way to the door she saw Qin Sang laid on the sofa. 'Let's go outside to eat, I'm hungry.'

'No. I don't want to eat, I want to sleep,' Qin Sang declined.

An Xiao Li blinked at Qin Sang's rare state of laziness then she gave Qin Sang a shady look. 'What did you do last night? Didn't you sleep?'

'Last night?' Qin Sang asked. 'I sat on a sofa of a hospital room for a few hours.'

An Xiao Li was surprised. She knew Qin Sang was aggressive in bed... but was Qin Sang that aggressive in bed to the extent Li Wei Ran was taken to the hospital for exhaustion? 'What? What happened to your nine tailed fox prince?'

Qin Sang saw through An Xiao Li's dirty thoughts. She smiled happily at the sight of someone who was about to be troubled. 'My Li Wei Ran is ok but your lover boy isn't ok.'

An Xiao Li's head conjured up an image of Chen Yu Bai's bleached white face and her heart got a bad feeling. 'What's... wrong with him?'

Qin Sang stretched her hands to the coffee table and poured herself a glass of water. Then she sat up and leaned back on the sofa. She covered her body with a bed sheet and leisurely sipped the water. Then she smiled innocently at An Xiao

Li. 'Who?'

'I... Chen Yu Bai,' An Xiao Li said.

'Oh? Chen Yu Bai's your lover boy?' Qin Sang teased.

An Xiao Li bit her tongue and denied. 'Of course he isn't!'

Qin Sang stood and walked toward the bathroom to shower. 'Then you don't need to worry about whether he lives or dies.'

An Xiao Li stood frozen at the front door with her pair of shoes in her hand. She didn't know what to do. Qin Sang suddenly opened the bathroom door and stuck her head out and gave An Xiao Li the hospital address and hospital room number that Chen Yu Bai was staying in.

'Why did you tell me that for?' An Xiao Li asked even though she knew why.

'If you're too free go visit him. Even if he's not your lover you can still visit him under the guise of an employee visiting their sick boss,' Qin Sang said.

End of Chapter Ten

Related

part 1

Chapter Eleven (Part 1)

An Xiao Li left Qin Sang's house in a daze. She went to have breakfast at one of hers and Qin Sang's favourite restaurants that made delicious buns. When the buns she ordered were cooked and put on her table, she ate one bun and she thought she heard the restaurant owner called 'little Bai' to come to the kitchen. Then she requested the owner to take away the rest of her buns instead.

At the hospital the sounds of giggles were heard from the nurses' break room. Rong Yan stepped out of the nurses' break room with a grin on his face. He strode toward his third brother's hospital room and from a distance he saw a girl stood in front of his third brother's hospital room.

When Rong Yan approached the girl he looked closer at her – oh, she was the girl that caused his sixth brother to be exiled to the Middle East by his third brother!

'Are you here to visit the patient?' Rong Yan asked gently from behind An Xiao Li's back.

Rong Yan nodded his head and gave An Xiao Li a warm smile. 'Why aren't you going inside?'

'Mmm... I don't want to intrude on CEO Chen's resting time,' An Xiao Li lied.

Rong Yan saw the way An Xiao Li awkwardly fiddled the take away bag she held and heard her call his third brother 'CEO Chen' and he understood straight away – she and his third brother were having a lover's tiff.

Rong Yan thought that An Xiao Li was a rarity – she was the reason why his third brother was taken to the hospital!

Rong Yan wanted to earn brownie points with his third brother so he draped an arm over An Xiao Li's shoulder and used his other arm to push open the door. 'You're already here, you may as well come inside.'

An Xiao Li couldn't retreat even if she wanted to, Rong Yan dragged her into Chen Yu Bai's hospital room before she could protest. They passed a small living

room and she saw Chen Yu Bai laid on a large bed.

‘Your remedy is here,’ Rong Yan teased.

Chen Yu Bai was resting on the bed. Ji Nan was reading a magazine on the sofa. When they both heard Rong Yan’s rowdy voice, they turned to see what was the remedy.

Something shimmered in Chen Yu Bai’s eyes but disappeared before anyone noticed.

Ji Nan recognised third sister-in-law and she wanted to tease third sister-in-law. ‘Visitors usually bring flowers and fruits, but what are you holding in your hands?’

Chen Yu Bai turned his head away from An Xiao Li but turned back to look at what she was holding in her hands.

An Xiao Li quickly hid the take away bag behind her back and laughed awkwardly. But unfortunately Rong Yan pushed her forward toward the bed and everyone stared at her. She was forced to take out the buns she ordered in the morning and asked the restaurant owner to wrap it up for her to give to Chen Yu Bai. ‘Mmm... do you want to eat? The buns are delicious.’

Rong Yan bent his head and politely held in his laughter. Ji Nan wasn’t as polite and laughed loudly.

Chen Yu Bai looked intensely at An Xiao Li who stood in front of the bed. He sighed, no matter what angle he looked at her, she still looked like a dummy. He felt unlucky, why did it have to be a dummy girl?

Chen Yu Bai calmly accepted a bun from An Xiao Li and took a bit into the bun.

Rong Yan and Ji Nan smiled like fools and didn’t say anything.

An Xiao Li forced herself to smile – she felt regret, the way Chen Yu Bai gobbled up the bun she was certain that the bun he ate was more delicious than the bun she ate in the morning.

The hospital doctor led a group of nurses into Chen Yu Bai’s room and interrupted the peaceful atmosphere.

‘Mr Chen junior! Why are you eating that?’ one of the nurses asked.

Afterward a chorus of other nurses joined in to stop Chen Yu Bai from eating something that looked unsanitary.

The doctor swept a cold gaze over the nurses to stop them making a commotion. Then the doctor turned to his uncooperative patient that kept eating the bun as if his patient didn't hear the chorus of naysayers before. 'Mr Chen junior, for the time being you can only eat liquid food. Please cooperate with our duty of care, we want you to recover fully.'

The nurses wholeheartedly supported the doctor's advice. 'That's right!'

An Xiao Li bent her head and spoke softly to Chen Yu Bai. 'Then you shouldn't eat anymore.'

Chen Yu Bai glanced coldly at An Xiao Li. He didn't say anything and kept eating the bun.

The doctor helplessly looked at Rong Yan and Ji Nan. The doctor's silent plea was dismissed. Rong Yan shrugged his shoulders and crossed his arms. Ji Nan turned to her third sister-in-law and laughed at her pitiful third sister-in-law.

An Xiao Li closed her eyes, grabbed half of the bun in Chen Yu Bai's hand and shoved it into her mouth.

Rong Yan and Ji Nan was in awe of their sister-in-law, they wanted to bow down to their sister-in-law's rare gift to bring peace into the room that their non-human third brother occupied. Whilst their third brother laid in bed with a wide smile on their third brother's usually indifferent face.

The doctor finished examining the uncooperative patient then he recorded the patient's body conditions on the patient's chart. 'Your peptic ulcer is caused by your poor diet, irregular eating habits and worsened by your cold. In the future you need to be more careful or the next time you'll experience more severe symptoms.'

The doctor took out the needle from Chen Yu Bai's wrist. An Xiao Li used a cotton swab to wipe the blood residue off Chen Yu Bai's wrist. She felt guilty after she heard the doctor's advice. The other night... after the air-conditioner was turned on, Chen Yu Bai wrapped the bed sheet around her and she slept on his chest. She didn't realise he didn't cover himself with anything until it was

morning. It must have been that night that he caught a cold. She also realised why his complexion was poor that morning and she dismissed it as him being in a bad mood.

After Rong Yan and Ji Nan left, An Xiao Li stayed back and used her fingers to remember all the things that the doctor advised for Chen Yu Bai to do to recover quickly.

‘Why did you come?’ Chen Yu Bai asked coldly.

An Xiao Li thought Chen Yu Bai was strangely extra cold toward her in the hospital room.

‘Spit it out,’ Chen Yu Bai said.

‘I’m sorry... I shouldn’t have made you skip lunch,’ An Xiao Li apologised.

An Xiao Li heard Miss Chen’s voice scolding her in her head. Since she was little Miss Chen expected simple things from her – for her to be honest and kind.

An Xiao Li felt that it didn’t matter what happened between her and Chen Yu Bai before, since the reason he was taken to the hospital was because of her. That was why it was only right that she apologised.

Chen Yu Bai’s cold aura lifted. He patted the empty spot next to him on the bed. ‘Dummy, come here.’

An Xiao Li sat on the bed like an anxious little bride. Chen Yu Bai wrapped an arm around her waist and pulled her to lay on top of him. She tried to get off him but he hugged her tighter. ‘Don’t move. Let me hug you for a while.’

Only a bed sheet separated Chen Yu Bai and An Xiao Li. He hugged her for a long time. The hospital room was quiet and peaceful for a long time too.

‘Does your stomach still hurt?’ An Xiao Li asked.

‘Um,’ Chen Yu Bai said.

‘Last night... what happened after I left?’ An Xiao Li asked.

‘Nothing happened,’ Chen Yu Bai said.

‘Little Bai,’ An Xiao Li called.

‘A security guard thought I forgot to turn off my office lights. He didn’t know

you pushed me against my work desk. He came inside my office to turn off the lights and found me unconscious. He took me to the hospital,' Chen Yu Bai explained.

'Chen Yu Bai,' An Xiao Li called.

'What?' Chen Yu Bai asked.

'I shouldn't have pushed you, I'm sorry,' An Xiao Li apologised.

'Um, I forgive you,' Chen Yu Bai said.

'The times you pretended you were sick... haven't you heard of the story of the boy who cried wolf?' An Xiao Li asked.

Chen Yu Bai fell into a state of speechlessness. He sighed. Why did it have to be the dummy girl that was laying on top of him?

End of Chapter Eleven (Part 1)

Related

part 2

Chapter Eleven (Part 2 of 2)

Li Wei Ran took Qin Sang to visit his third brother at the hospital. When they arrived at the hospital on level nine from a distance they saw a large sign outside Chen Yu Bai's hospital room – 'Please do not disturb.'

Li Wei Ran and Qin Sang glanced at each other and gave each other a didn't-see-any-sign look. They walked to Chen Yu Bai's door and Li Wei Ran took off the sign. He gently opened the door. Then he held her hand and crept softly into his third brother's hospital room.

'Eat another bite, ok?' An Xiao Li coaxed.

'Too bland, I don't want to eat anymore,' Chen Yu Bai sulked.

'The doctor said that you can't eat flavoursome food for a while or you'll have another relapse because your stomach is still weak,' An Xiao Li reasoned.

'Didn't the doctor tell you that you can't provoke me? I'm really weak too,' Chen Yu Bai said.

'Then are you going to eat or not? If you don't eat, I'm leaving,' An Xiao Li threatened.

'Eat,' Chen Yu Bai said.

'Hehe... third brother, are you being sulky?' Li Wei Ran teased.

Chen Yu Bai wore a hospital patient gown. His complexion was still pale but his mood was good until his fifth brother ruined his meal time with Xiao Li. He gave his fifth brother a didn't-you-see-the-sign-outside look.

In An Xiao Li's left hand was a bowl of puree congee and in her right hand was a small spoon. When she saw Qin Sang interrupted her feeding little Bai, she narrowed her eyes and greeted Qin Sang sourly.

Li Wei Ran gave a bag of fruits to An Xiao Li.

An Xiao Li accepted the bag of fruits and Chen Yu Bai nodded his head at Qin Sang as a greeting.

Rong Yan didn't get to see the sign and came to visit his third brother briefly. After Rong Yan left, Qin Sang nodded her head at Chen Yu Bai and Chen Yu Bai understood her signal.

'Wei Ran, go buy a cup of coffee for me,' Qin Sang asked.

Chen Yu Bai looked at An Xiao Li. 'Go to the doctor and ask for my hospital record from last year and bring it here.'

An Xiao Li was eating the grapes from the bag of fruits. She heard Chen Yu Bai's request and pouted her lips. She unwillingly went outside.

'What is it?' Chen Yu Bai asked but he was flicking through work papers and didn't bother to look at Qin Sang.

'Of course it's about you and An Xiao Li,' Qin Sang said.

'Thank you for your concern,' Chen Yu Bai said.

'No need for thanks. But I need to inconvenience you to give me a clear answer. I used to think you were a little weird, but now I think unless you see the coffin then you won't shed tears,' Qin Sang said.

'Thanks for the compliment,' Chen Yu Bai said.

'Don't be modest,' Qin Sang said.

Chen Yu Bai and Qin Sang were similar non-humans. He'd fire a cannon and she'd fend it off like a sturdy mountain. The hospital room quickly became a smoky fog of war of words.

'I'm serious,' Chen Yu Bai finally surrendered.

Chen Yu Bai understood who Qin Sang wanted to protect. He knew being civil with Qin Sang would only benefit him instead of harming him.

Qin Sang calmly brushed through her hair. 'That's good to hear. Other things you can figure out for yourself. But I'm reminding you, An Xiao Li's IQ is not enough for you to make assumptions and scheme. You're better off being more simple-minded and straightforward. If you keep winding her up then one day she'll have a rethink and leave you. I won't be surprised if that happens. Chen Yu Bai, you have your moments when you're too sure of yourself.'

Chen Yu Bai tossed his work papers aside and looked at Qin Sang. 'More simple-minded and straightforward? Qin Sang, you're all talk... what about you? Toward my fifth brother, are you simple-minded and straightforward?'

The smoky fog in Chen Yu Bai's room became a tensed entrance to hell.

The doctor informed An Xiao Li that Chen Yu Bai's hospital records were stored on level seven. Since she was free, she generously went to level seven to get the hospital records.

An Xiao Li walked to the elevator and when it opened she stepped inside. She pressed the level seven button and suddenly she heard a familiar voice behind her. 'Xiao Li?'

An Xiao Li got the shivers and slowly turned around to look at the... stale frog from her past.

The stale frog wore a cast on one of his arms but he was still handsome. It was the former Prince Chu who couldn't endure a week of loneliness and rode off on his horse that year long ago.

'It's really you!' Chu Hao Ran said.

Chu Hao Ran excitedly wedged between the other people in the elevator and hopped like a frog toward An Xiao Li.

'Um. Hehe... what a coincidence,' An Xiao Li said politely. 'You're injured?'

'Um. Car crash,' Chu Hao Ran said.

An Xiao Li noticed the elevator opened to the seventh floor and waved her hand to farewell the stale frog. 'This is my stop. We'll chat more next time.'

An Xiao Li rushed out of the door to distance herself from the stale frog. But he chased after her and called out her name loudly. Then he fell on the ground. She had no choice but to turn around and help him. 'Hey, be careful.'

The sentimental look in the stale frog's eyes gave An Xiao Li the creeps and she shivered more. She praised herself for her calmness.

Afterward An Xiao Li returned to level nine, the moment she entered Chen Yu

Bai's room she saw his good mood was gone and he was back to his usual cold self. But she felt like she escaped punishment because he didn't see her unwanted reunion with the stale frog.

'Did you fly to the sky to get my records?' Chen Yu Bai sulked.

An Xiao Li just smiled sweetly and didn't argue. She didn't want her tongue to slip.

'Third sister-in-law's back, Sang Sang we can leave now,' Li Wei Ran teased.

An Xiao Li escorted Li Wei Ran and Qin Sang outside, but pulled Qin Sang aside. Li Wei Ran nodded to Qin Sang and went to get his car first to give the two best friends privacy.

'What is it?' Qin Sang asked.

'I... ran into Chu Hao Ran,' An Xiao Li said.

Qin Sang was surprised but on the inside she felt amused. She thought Chen Yu Bai shouldn't have dismissed what she advised him as passing wind. Even the heavens plotted to shake his arrogance a little.

When An Xiao Li returned back to Chen Yu Bai's room, the way his eyes focused on her every movement made her paranoid that he overheard what she said to Qin Sang.

'Want me to peel you an apple to eat?' An Xiao Li asked sweetly to distract Chen Yu Bai.

'I want to eat grapes,' Chen Yu Bai sulked.

An Xiao Li panicked. She ate all the grapes before so she silently peeled the apple and gave it to Chen Yu Bai.

Chen Yu Bai turned his head away and refused to eat the apple.

An Xiao Li didn't mind, she happily bit into the apple and chewed.

Chen Yu Bai turned his head back and pulled An Xiao Li onto the bed.

An Xiao Li was startled and she dropped her delicious apple on the floor. She hit Chen Yu Bai's chest gently. 'My apple...'

'My grapes...' Chen Yu Bai said.

Chen Yu Bai kissed An Xiao Li's lips hungrily and his tongue invaded her mouth. His tongue tasted the grape juice on her tongue.

'Little Bai...' An Xiao Li whispered in Chen Yu Bai's ear. 'You haven't recovered... about that... mmm... it's not suitable... exerts too much energy...'

'It's your fault for not letting me eat grapes so I'll eat you,' Chen Yu Bai said.

Chen Yu Bai rolled An Xiao Li under him and kissed her until her body was limp. She vaguely realised why she was calm when she ran into the stale frog before, because she was under her little Bai's spell.

The sound of a nurse's laughter from outside gradually became louder as the nurse came closer to Chen Yu Bai's room. He reacted first. He laid on top of An Xiao Li and covered both of them with the bed sheet. For the second time that day, she felt like she was sneaking around like a criminal.

Chen Yu Bai and An Xiao Li silently faced each other. His body was pressed on top of her and she had trouble breathing. She pushed him off her a little and he pressed his body closer to her... as a result something hard sprung to life and made it harder for her to breathe.

'There's someone...' An Xiao Li pleaded weakly.

Chen Yu Bai slammed the nurse call button on top of the bed off. Then all his attentions and his body were focused on Xiao Li.

An Xiao Li heard the nurse's laughter gradually disappeared. In her intoxicated state she wanted to lift the bed sheet off them, but Chen Yu Bai gripped her hands. In a blink of an eye she lost all her senses and was completely captivated by him.

Chen Yu Bai liked to be stimulated by sneaking around in public so he kept Xiao Li under him and covered by the bed sheet – he slowly tortured her.

After a long time Chen Yu Bai was done torturing Xiao Li, he still refused to let her go. He kept his body pressed on top of her body and caressed nonstop everywhere on her body. Her body was too limp to struggle against his touch. She wrapped her arms around his waist and gently asked him if his stomach still hurt. They chatted aimlessly with each other. It was the first time after having sex together that they were cocooned by tenderness.

End of Chapter Eleven (Part 2 of 2)

Related

Chapter Twelve

Chapter Twelve

Qin Sang had her first real fight with Li Wei Ran. She laid on her sofa and the fight with him kept replaying in her head. She was too frustrated and needed her drinking buddy. She called An Xiao Li's phone.

'Come home now,' Qin Sang ordered.

'What is it?' An Xiao Li asked.

'Within thirty minutes, come home with a beer pack. If you're late one minute, I'll strangle you to death,' Qin Sang said in a serious tone.

'Do you not have hands or legs?' Chen Yu Bai asked coldly.

Qin Sang laughed coldly and was about to battle with Chen Yu Bai when An Xiao Li grabbed the phone back from him. 'I'll be home soon, wait for me.'

'Um,' Qin Sang said, hung up and flung her phone on the floor.

At the hospital, An Xiao Li obediently packed her belongings to go check on her best friend. Chen Yu Bai watched unhappily as she packed and when she wasn't looking he hid her phone and keys under the bedspread. She patiently searched for her phone and keys whilst pacifying little Bai who was a little taller than one point eight metres, but there was little difference between little Bai and a little kid. By the time she packed and ready to go, half an hour passed.

An Xiao Li stroked Chen Yu Bai's forehead to soothe his anger. 'Be good, don't be angry anymore. Tomorrow I'll bring delicious dishes for you, ok?'

Chen Yu Bai's lips almost twitched into a smile but he snorted to avoid smiling.

An Xiao Li felt no matter what angle she looked at Chen Yu Bai, he looked loveable. Her fingers lingered on his chin before she was about to leave. Suddenly her phone rang and her stomach knotted because she didn't want to be punished by him that night and be strangled by Qin Sang in the morning.

The caller was Chu Hao Ran. An Xiao Li's limited IQ asked for her permission – 'do you want to take the call?'

An Xiao Li didn't hesitate to answer her limited IQ – 'of course not!' She pressed the reject call button. Then she secretly glanced at her wicked ice glacier and her stomach unknotted. It was lucky he was looking over his work papers and didn't see who called her phone.

An Xiao Li looked at her watch and quickly picked up her bag and phone – she was over the time limit the wicked witch gave her to get home. She rushed to the door.

'An-Xiao-Li!' Chen Yu Bai called An Xiao Li back.

An Xiao Li turned around. Chen Yu Bai was still on the bed holding his work papers in his hands. 'Huh? What's wrong?'

Chen Yu Bai lifted his head from his work papers and gave Xiao Li a gentle smile. 'It's nothing. I just want to let you know, if you're hiding anything from me, it's best if you hide it properly. Even till death don't let me find out. Otherwise... you know about the serious consequences that awaits you, right?'

On the way back home, An Xiao Li was traumatised by the wicked witch's death call and Chen Yu Bai's scary gentle smile.

The following morning...

An Xiao Li was able to soothe the wicked witch to sleep after a night of drinking and persuading the wicked witch to reconcile with the nine tailed fox prince. An Xiao Li borrowed the wicked witch's modern broom and drove it to the hospital.

An Xiao Li arrived at the hospital car park and her infamous driving skills nearly caused an accident – she almost ran over a pedestrian.

An Xiao Li in a frightened state parked the wicked witch's modern broom. She got out of the modern broom and she was happy she almost ran over the right kind of pedestrian – a stale frog. 'Chu Hao Ran, do you want to test my reflexes?'

Chu Hao Ran still wore an arm cast. He gave An Xiao Li his usual appealing smile and spoke to her tenderly. 'The last few days I've waited for you here and I'm glad my wait wasn't in vain.'

An Xiao Li's priority was not letting the soy milk get cold and she didn't have

the patience to be polite with the stale frog. 'What is it?'

Chu Hao Ran rubbed An Xiao Li's head without her permission. 'Xiao Li, can we chat over lunch? It's been a long time since we've spoken to each other properly. I have a lot of things I want to say to you.'

An Xiao Li didn't have time to deal with the stale frog, she nodded her head and rushed to little Bai's hospital room before the soy milk was cold.

Inside Chen Yu Bai's hospital room were two visitors. Liang Fei Feng stood beside Chen Yu Bai's bed and Gu Yan sat on the sofa flicking through a magazine.

Gu Yan smiled happily when she saw An Xiao Li arrived. She stood and walked toward An Xiao Li because she was curious what was inside the Dewar bottle (vacuum flask / thermos bottle) An Xiao Li was holding. 'Xiao Li, what did you bring that smells delicious?'

The ice glacier on the bed gestured his hand for An Xiao Li to come to the bed. She walked over to the bed and put the soy milk on the table in front of the bed. She poured a glass of soy milk. Then she thought she should be polite toward Gu Yan. 'Big sister Gu Yan, do you want to drink a glass?'

'You're so kind!' Gu Yan complimented.

Gu Yan was really curious about the black drink An Xiao Li poured into the glass. She accepted the glass from An Xiao Li and took a sip from the glass. It was fragrant, refreshing and delicious!

Chen Yu Bai wasn't happy to see Gu Yan happily drinking a glass of something that Xiao Li brought for him. He pushed his glasses up and spoke calmly to Xiao Li. 'In the morning did you eat youtiao (fried breadstick, it looks like two chopsticks stuck together) and buns?'

An Xiao Li nodded her head. 'How did you know?'

Chen Yu Bai drank his glass of black soy milk and smiled warmly. 'I can taste it.'

An Xiao Li laughed awkwardly. 'Hehe... about that... I still had half a cup left and couldn't drink it all. I didn't want to waste it so I poured it into the bottle and brought it here...'

Chen Yu Bai happily gulped down more black soy milk and didn't say anything.

Gu Yan didn't say anything either, but she didn't touch her glass of black soy milk again. She sat on the sofa for a little while and nagged Liang Fei Fang to take her home. Liang Fei Fang still had a lot of business matters to discuss with Chen Yu Bai, but Liang Fei Fang listened to Gu Yan's request. They said goodbye to Chen Yu Bai and An Xiao Li and hurriedly left the hospital room.

Chen Yu Bai smirked, tidied his work papers and put them on a table. He beckoned Xiao Li to feed him more black soy milk.

An Xiao Li poured the rest of the black soy milk into a bowl and fed the black soy milk to Chen Yu Bai spoon by spoon. She saw that he was in a good mood and she felt it was a good time to tell him. 'Later I'll go and buy a few things and I'll come back after lunch. Be good and eat lunch on your own, ok?'

'Um,' Chen Yu Bai said. His good mood was swallowed along with the last spoon of black soy milk. He didn't protest about Xiao Li not having lunch with him but wasn't happy either.

Inside a cafe, next to a window the former Prince Chu was smiling to himself whilst waiting for An Xiao Li.

An Xiao Li ran all the way from little Bai's hospital room and was exhausted by the time she sat in front of the stale frog. 'I'm sorry, I'm late.'

Chu Hao Ran misunderstood the reason why An Xiao Li rushed to get to the cafe. He thought she couldn't wait to see him and he smiled brightly. 'It's ok. I'm willing to wait for you however long it takes.'

An Xiao Li looked at the menu to pick a drink whilst carelessly teasing the stale frog. 'Chu Hao Ran, you're flirting skills are even better than it was in the past.'

Chu Hao Ran looked out the window and appeared to be reflective. 'Right now I wish all my flirting skills were lost-'

'One iced macchiato,' An Xiao Li said to the waitress.

'She's not having the iced macchiato. Give her a hot vanilla latte,' Chu Hao Ran said to the waitress. Then he turned to An Xiao Li. 'It's not good for a girl to drink a cold drink especially when autumn is drawing near.'

The waitress was a young girl who was holding back a smile and secretly glanced at An Xiao Li with admiration in the young girl's eyes.

An Xiao Li understood the waitress' secret glance of admiration. Chu Hao Ran's whole body could be in a cast and he'd still be handsome. Also, he was always a man who was gentle and considerate. He wasn't like little Bai. Little Bai never gave her a chance to choose what she wanted to eat or drink. Little Bai always chose the food and drinks he liked, forced her to eat and drink like him and didn't care whether she liked eating or drinking what he chose.

Whilst waiting for the waitress to make the drinks, Chu Hao Ran comfortably chatted with An Xiao Li.

The waitress arrived quickly with two hot coffees. Chu Hao Ran stirred his coffee and took a sip. 'These past few years I've thought about you. Once I was passing by your school and I went inside to find you.'

'Oh?' An Xiao Li asked.

An Xiao Li never knew Chu Hao Ran made an effort to meet her again.

'You changed your phone number and I couldn't find you. Later I called Qin Sang. At that time I... really wanted to see you. Qin Sang refused to tell me anything about how you were doing. She just asked me one question – if An Xiao Li died, are you willing to die to follow her?'

An Xiao Li stayed silent. She realised the wicked witch was too non-human.

'I said to Qin Sang that I can't and she said – then you can't see An Xiao Li because An Xiao Li doesn't need you anymore,' Chu Hao Ran said softly as the soft background music in the cafe. It would have made the waitress swooned if she overheard the tenderness in his voice. 'Xiao Li, I was wrong. Can we start again?'

An Xiao Li returned to Chen Yu Bai's hospital room and there were new visitors.

The beer belly old man brought a group of employees to visit Chen Yu Bai and Wang Qi was one of the employees who came. The moment An Xiao Li's co-

workers saw her stepped into the room, they gave her sly smiles.

‘Pour tea and bring it here,’ Chen Yu Bai said to An Xiao Li. Then he turned to his employees. ‘Take a seat.’

An Xiao Li poured tea into tea cups and put them on a tray. She carried the tray of tea cups to her co-workers. Wang Qi was sitting the furthest away from the bed and he saw how she was carrying the tray carefully and rushed to help her carry the tray. She smiled sweetly at Wang Qi for being considerate and Wang Qi smiled helplessly and nodded his head.

The beer belly old man’s group of visitors stayed for a little while and said their farewells before leaving. Chen Yu Bai didn’t step down from his bed so An Xiao Li escorted the visitors outside. When she returned the atmosphere in the room became icy like his face.

An Xiao Li followed the ice glacier for a long period and she was able to read some of his different icy expressions. Usually his cold aura formed a circle around him that didn’t let outsiders into the circle.

When the ice glacier was angry, his icy aura was spread out in all directions and his whole body gave out sharp icy dagger vibes. If anyone dared to poke the ice glacier when he was angry then their whole body would be the receiver of his iciness.

The ice glacier was also capable of shooting sharp icy daggers that gave the receiver a sense of a cold burn. The cold burn consisted of his gentleness and warmth. He reserved the cold burn for An Xiao Li.

‘Come here,’ Chen Yu Bai said calmly.

An Xiao Li in a daze stepped toward the bed. The moment she was within Chen Yu Bai’s reach, he abruptly sat up and gripped her waist to pull her onto the bed. Then he rolled over and his body was pressed on top of her body.

‘An Xiao Li, didn’t I say that you need to hide it properly?’ Chen Yu Bai asked.

Chen Yu Bai’s hair was a little long and it fell onto An Xiao Li’s forehead. It made her forehead itchy and she turned her head to the side. He gripped her chin and their four eyes assessed each other. In his eyes there was a burning anger. Her heart pounded wildly – she was ruined, how did he find out about Chu

Hao Ran?

‘I...’ An Xiao Li said softly. Her body tensed. ‘It’s nothing... he was the one who sought me out!’

‘Is that so?’ Chen Yu Bai asked coldly.

Chen Yu Bai’s cold fingers slowly slid down to Xiao Li’s neck.

In that moment it was an afternoon and outside Chen Yu Bai’s hospital room there were a flood of people passing by. An Xiao Li felt that his breath on her was hot and heavy and the desire in his eyes gradually burned more intense. It made her remember her suffering from his recent performance – after that day, the bedspread was wrinkled and was drenched from their combined bodies’ sweat and climax. She had to be thick-skinned and got rid of the wet bedspread herself. He on the other hand had the look of satisfaction and sat up leaning against the bedhead. He enjoyed watching her embarrassed state and wearing wrinkled clothes to tidy the room and get rid of the evidence of their public display of affections.

‘You’re truly... really not obedient,’ Chen Yu Bai whispered.

Chen Yu Bai’s burning lips kissed Xiao Li.

An Xiao Li’s phone rang in the midst of the burning hot atmosphere. She was woken from the haze Chen Yu Bai weaved and struggled against him to answer her phone. But he didn’t let her and he continued to light her body on fire. His erection rubbed against her pants pocket and pressed the call button of her phone that was inside her pants pocket.

Chu Hao Ran’s warm voice was heard from An Xiao Li’s phone. ‘Xiao Li?’

An Xiao Li quickly reacted. She pushed little Bai off her, jumped off the bed and took a few steps from the bed to answer the phone. In front of her, little Bai’s half smile was truly scary and she quickly said a few inaudible sounds to Chu Hao Ran and hung up her phone.

‘Mmm... don’t be angry, listen to me,’ An Xiao Li said. ‘I... truly it was just a coincidental meeting...’

Chen Yu Bai smiled coldly and stared at An Xiao Li for ten seconds. One second

before she was about to kneel on her jelly legs to admit her fault for hiding her meeting with Chu Hao Ran, Chen Yu Bai took out a thin paper from his stack of work papers on the table near the bed. He put the thin paper in front of her face. 'Do you know how many business contracts 'Tian Ruan' receives from Liang's company annually? I just need to lift a finger and within a month Tian Ruan will be bankrupt. Even if you hide from me you're looking for work at another company, you should ask yourself – in this district, the woman I don't want to let go, will another company dare to accept?'

Chen Yu Bai's iciness caused the burning hot atmosphere in the room to cool down.

An Xiao Li breathed out a sigh of relief – she was lucky that little Bai didn't find out about Chu Hao Ran yet.

'I was wrong,' An Xiao Li quickly admitted her fault. 'In the future I won't dare anymore. Till death, I'll be loyal to CEO Chen.'

An Xiao Li was quietly happy. It was the same kind of happiness she felt when she was a kid after one of her exams. She thought she failed one of her exams and unexpectedly after the exams were marked she received an eighty score for the exam she thought she failed.

Chen Yu Bai felt his teeth were itchy so he clenched his teeth. He looked at Xiao Li and wanted to grill her meat. But the way she was sucking up to him sweetly with her smiles and pleading eyes made him sigh helplessly. He couldn't bear to hit her bottom or give her a harsh scolding. He felt like a tamed pet and didn't have the ability to be angry anymore.

'Next time there won't be an exception,' Chen Yu Bai warned. He pulled An Xiao Li back onto the bed. He hugged her waist and she laid her head on his shoulder. 'An Xiao Li, remember clearly, I'm not a lenient man.'

End of Chapter Twelve

Related

part 1

Spoiler Warning Chapter Thirteen (Part 1) has a steamy scene – PG rating

Chapter Thirteen (Part 1)

Chen Yu Bai's health improved at a fast rate under An Xiao Li's 'no place forbidden to touch' attentive care.

It was autumn and the atmosphere gradually became lethargic. Even a workaholic like Chen Yu Bai didn't have any inclinations to work. All day he'd look at Xiao Li, he didn't need to eat her and he'd still be able to find amusement. Xiao Li fell for his trap once and didn't want to make the same mistake twice in public so she was more alert and able to avoid him before he made his move on her.

In the afternoon it was peaceful, there weren't visitors. Chen Yu Bai looked over his work papers for a while and felt bored. Xiao Li was quietly resting on the sofa next to him, but he kept interrupting her rest to watch TV with him.

Little Bai held the remote that controlled the angle movements of the TV screen so An Xiao Li was forced to move her lazy body closer to him inch by inch. Little Bai's body was tall and broad, he hugged her and half her body leaned into his chest. The more she had to twist her body to see the TV screen the further her body sank. She ended up laying her head on his lap and her head was levelled with his stomach. She was immersed in watching the documentary about wild beasts.

But the warm scene of a couple relaxing on the sofa watching TV was cut short by little Bai's hand. An Xiao Li thought in their situation it was ideal for little Bai to stroke her hair... why didn't his hand cooperate? 'Chen-Yu-Bai! Can't you be romantic for a bit?'

An Xiao Li gripped little Bai's wrist that was attached to his hand that was kneading her breasts. She used her strength to pull his hand away but failed.

Little Bai laughed cheekily. He draped a leg over An Xiao Li's stomach to stop her from leaving the sofa. His wild beast sneakily erected a tent behind her neck.

She heard the impatience in his voice. 'What man can be romantic when your head's leaning against their crotch?'

An Xiao Li's embarrassment turned to anger. She fought with his hands but when she was about to win the war, suddenly she was switched to the losing side – she struggled too much, little Bai draped his leg over her stomach and trapped her... her face ended up pressed against his excited wild beast.

Chen Yu Bai groaned in pain and lost the ability to think about anything else. 'An Xiao Li, do you want the next half of your life to have nothing left to serve you?'

An Xiao Li felt giddy. She quietly crawled up from little Bai's lap and rested her head on his arm. She lifted her head to look at his scrunched face from the pain she inflicted on his excited wild beast. 'The next half of my life? Do you want to marry me?'

'An Xiao Li, perhaps...' Chen Yu Bai mumbled.

An Xiao Li tugged little Bai's arm to get him to say more. 'Perhaps what?'

Little Bai bent his head and looked at An Xiao Li's eyes from a close distance. His eyes were darker and unreadable as if he was deep in thought. 'Perhaps, it's truly you.'

Xiao Li of course didn't understand Chen Yu Bai's meaning. He smiled and wrapped his arms around her waist like a kid hugging their beloved teddy. She was surprised by his sudden movement and cried out but he hugged her tight against his chest.

The insecurity, frustration, indecisiveness and hesitation that Chen Yu Bai thought it wasn't possible for him to have... was slowly being pulled out of him by Xiao Li. The bitter sweet smiles that he thought his lips weren't capable of forming... was slowly appearing one after another with Xiao Li. Perhaps his judgement of himself was truly wrong up until he met Xiao Li or perhaps he was really just a person with bare flesh and bones... perhaps, truly only Xiao Li could give him 'love.'

The lawns of the hospital garden were still green but during autumn the leaves

were scattered on the lawns and the garden footpaths. There were less people outside strolling during autumn and the atmosphere was bleak.

Chen Yu Bai held An Xiao Li's hand and walked along a garden footpath. He was still handsome wearing a hospital patient gown. The top two buttons of his gown was opened and only exposed his collar bone, but it was enough for her to lose her senses. She couldn't control herself from smiling like a fool.

The sun shone orange light on Xiao Li's dazed head. Chen Yu Bai pursed his lips and didn't say anything. He just wanted her to be happy, it was enough.

Suddenly, An Xiao Li's foolish smile turned upside down quickly like a turning of the tide.

Chu Hao Ran appeared out of nowhere and obstructed Chen Yu Bai and An Xiao Li's path.

'Why didn't you answer the phone?' Chu Hao Ran asked An Xiao Li. He put out the document he was fiddling with. 'You left this behind in the cafe. I forgot to tell you about it on the phone. I called you back but you didn't pick up. Here, I'm returning it to you.'

Chu Hao Ran acted as if there was no one around him and An Xiao Li, he placed the adorable strawberry shaped document on her head.

An Xiao Li noticed that Chu Hao Ran pretended he didn't see little Bai. Chu Hao Ran only paid attention to her and smiled brightly at her. She felt the atmosphere in the garden turned disastrous like a glacier landslide. She felt breathless. Her hand that little Bai held became colder and the cold chill spread along her arm.

'Um,' An Xiao Li said. She grabbed her document from her head. Then she stepped back and stood beside little Bai. She awkwardly introduced him to Chu Hao Ran. 'This is little Bai.'

Chu Hao Ran raised his eyebrows and An Xiao Li realised she called Chen Yu Bai by his pet name by accident. She wanted to bite off her tongue and swallow it down to her stomach. 'Chen Yu Bai. CEO Chen... he's the CEO of my company.' She turned to little Bai to introduced Chu Hao Ran. 'This is Chu Hao Ran... he's a friend.'

Chen Yu Bai politely put out his free arm to shake hands with Chu Hao Ran. ‘Mr Chu.’

Chu Hao Ran was also polite. He forced a smile and shook Chen Yu Bai’s hand. ‘CEO Chen, it’s an honour.’

‘I don’t dare to accept,’ Chen Yu Bai said calmly.

An Xiao Li was shocked. She was ready to call the police but... little Bai and Chu Hao Ran were polite to each other.

After Chen Yu Bai greeted Chu Hao Ran, he dismissed Chu Hao Ran as if Chu Hao Ran was invisible. Chen Yu Bai turned to Xiao Li without hesitation. ‘I’m hungry. Let’s go eat.’

An Xiao Li just wanted to leave and nodded her head like a bobblehead on a car dashboard.

Chu Hao Ran grabbed An Xiao Li’s free arm. ‘When will we see each other next? You agreed you’ll think about what I said to you. I’m still waiting for your answer.’

Chu Hao Ran bent his head and looked deeply into An Xiao Li’s eyes. He also pretended Chen Yu Bai was invisible too.

Chen Yu Bai’s eyes became dark as squid ink. The atmosphere little by little became frozen. But he didn’t say another word, he just gently pressed his hand on his stomach.

‘Talk about it later, I need to go,’ An Xiao Li said to Chu Hao Ran without taking her eyes off little Bai.

Chu Hao Ran’s state of shock and disappointment was obvious because he stood frozen and speechless.

Whilst Xiao Li was checking Chen Yu Bai’s stomach for injuries, he looked straight at Chu Hao Ran and gave Chu Hao Ran an icy smile.

That night, An Xiao Li ate less than ten spoonfuls of dinner. But little Bai ate a whole fish and slurped a bowl of fish broth without leaving a single drop behind inside the bowl. She thought the way he ate calmly like nothing happened in the

afternoon was scary.

After dinner, little Bai sat on the bed and leaned against the bedhead reading a book. An Xiao Li held the TV remote and changed the channels continuously whilst she secretly glanced at him. But since dinner she didn't see him even gave her a threatening look or made a fuss about Chu Hao Ran.

When it was past nine, An Xiao Li picked up her bag and keys ready to go home. 'Mmm... I'm leaving.'

'Um,' Chen Yu Bai said.

'Little Bai...' An Xiao Li called.

'Um,' Chen Yu Bai said.

'I'm... really going,' An Xiao Li said.

Chen Yu Bai lifted his head from the book he was reading and smiled gently at Xiao Li. 'What is it? Are you waiting for me to escort you downstairs?'

An Xiao Li's throat was choked. She bent her head and fiddled with her bag's zipper. She bit her lips and left little Bai's room.

Behind Xiao Li's retreating back, Chen Yu Bai bent his head and looked at the same page he'd read for the last hour.

At home An Xiao Li went into the wicked witch's cave but didn't see anyone. She jumped onto the wicked witch's large pink bed and called the wicked witch for a counselling session.

'Chen Yu Bai hasn't acknowledged me as anyone significant in his life. What right does he have to stop me from keeping my options opened?' An Xiao Li reasoned.

'Oh, it turns out you're actually a player,' Qin Sang teased.

'Qin-Sang! I hate you,' An Xiao Li said.

'He hasn't acknowledged you but his body has acknowledged you. You haven't objected so you've also accepted him without saying anything,' Qin Sang said.

'Did little Bai bribe you? Or is it because you're about to be married off so

you're siding with your husband's sworn brothers?' An Xiao Li asked.

'I'm sleepy to death but I still have to listen to your nonsense. Do you have a conscience?' Qin Sang scolded. 'What's your heart feeling? Do you like little Bai or Chu Hao Ran?'

'I like little Bai, but not to the point that it has to be him. If he continues to be unclear about his intentions toward me then I don't want to waste my youth with him,' An Xiao Li said.

'You have will power,' Qin Sang said.

'Of course,' An Xiao Li said.

'Our counselling session is done for the night. Have a good night,' Qin Sang said.

'Hey! I haven't told you what happened in the evening yet,' An Xiao Li stalled.

'I write romance novels every day, I don't need you to rehash it for me to hear. I'm really sleepy. I'm sleeping now,' Qin Sang said.

'Don't be like that. Sang Sang, I can't sleep. Talk to me,' An Xiao Li pleaded. 'Sang Sang? Sang Sang... Qin Sang, you prioritise your lover over your friend the most in the world!'

There was no response from Qin Sang's end so An Xiao Li hung up her phone.

An Xiao Li rolled around on the large pink bed and still couldn't sleep. She resorted to texting little Bai. 'Little Bai, are you asleep?'

An Xiao Li rolled around on the large pink bed again for a little while before her phone rang, it was little Bai.

The night was quiet, little Bai's tone was sweet and it deeply moved An Xiao Li's heart. 'Can't sleep?'

'Um,' An Xiao Li said.

'Missing me?' Chen Yu Bai asked.

'Something like that,' An Xiao Li said.

'Come to me. I'll wait for you,' Chen Yu Bai said.

‘No, it’s too late,’ An Xiao Li declined. She’d starved little Bai for days. Plus, she’d provoked his anger in the afternoon. If she offered herself straight to his mouth then she’d be nervous about the extent of the torture he’d inflict on her. ‘You should sleep early.’

‘Can’t sleep,’ Chen Yu Bai said. He sighed. ‘I miss you too.’

An Xiao Li’s heart trembled with giddiness – ‘little Bai can’t sleep... the reason he can’t sleep is because he misses you.’ Her cheeks flushed pink.

Chen Yu Bai and An Xiao Li hugged their own feelings and didn’t say anything else. In the quiet night, their phones exchanged their rapid breathing.

The following day at the break of dawn, An Xiao Li cooked black soy milk herself and bought buns at a restaurant. She brought the black soy milk and buns straight to little Bai’s hospital room for him to eat whilst they were steaming hot.

At the hospital, An Xiao Li softly opened little Bai’s door and crept inside. As she expected he wasn’t awake yet. The heater was on, the bed sheet only covered his body partially and he laid curled up. The buttons of his gown were unbuttoned and exposed his toned chest.

An Xiao Li bit her lips and held in a giddy laugh. She put the food on the table then lifted the bed sheet to cover his whole body.

Chen Yu Bai was woken up by the swish-swoosh sounds of a bag. He opened his eyes and saw Xiao Li putting his breakfast on a table. She was smiling to herself early in the morning. He closed his eyes and waited. The moment her back faced him after she adjusted the bed sheet over him, he pulled her by her waist and she fell on top of him on the bed.

An Xiao Li fell backward, little Bai hugged her from behind and she couldn’t move.

‘Hehe... today I personally cooked the black soy milk and added honey too. Do you want to eat it?’ An Xiao Li asked.

From the moment Chen Yu Bai was awake, his desire for Xiao Li was at boiling

point. He squeezed her waist tighter. 'I want to eat you first.'

'Not good timing,' An Xiao Li reasoned.

Chen Yu Bai flipped Xiao Li and he pinned her to the bed. 'Opposing is futile.'

Little Bai's breath was hot on An Xiao Li's face. He kissed her but his usual cool mint scent was missing. She turned her head to the side. 'You haven't brushed your teeth.'

Chen Yu Bai turned Xiao Li's head back to face him. He bit her lips. 'You dare mock me?'

An Xiao Li pouted her lips and stayed silent. Little Bai pressed her further into the bed. He licked and kissed her. She was ticklish and laughed giddily.

Chen Yu Bai was in the middle of torturing Xiao Li when he heard the door creaked opened and his back became rigid. He turned toward the direction of the door. 'Who's there? You can't come in!'

The sounds of footsteps immediately stopped at the door. But on the carpet floor were the sounds of paws running toward the bed. Chen Yu Bai looked down the bed. He saw a Siberian Husky that was tall as half of Xiao Li's body and the Siberian Husky stood in front of their bed.

'Third brother... it's me, Ji Nan. I... was going for a morning jog and was passing by... can I come inside and take my dog with me to continue jogging?' Ji Nan said.

'Wait outside twenty minutes! Go back further away!' Chen Yu Bai ordered.

Ji Nan heard a strange anger from her third brother's tone of voice that she didn't recognise. But it was scary enough for her whole body to shiver and she quickly took ten steps back away from the door.

On the bed An Xiao Li's face was bright red. She pinched little Bai's chest. 'Quickly go outside.'

Of course little Bai refused. He inched himself deeper into An Xiao Li and paralysed her senses.

The Siberian Husky sat in front of the bed and its naive eyes watched the male and female interlocking their bodies together on the bed.

An Xiao Li was affected by the Siberian Husky's clear innocent eyes and she wasn't comfortable having sex with Little Bai whilst the Siberian Husky was watching them. Whereas Little Bai was unaffected, his wild beast's strokes became stronger. A long time later he grunted and his whole body tensed for a few seconds. Finally his body relaxed and collapsed on her body.

The Siberian Husky looked at the male and female thrashing and rolling around under the bed sheet for a long time and still couldn't understand what the purpose of their actions under the bed sheet was.

Chen Yu Bai looked down from the bed and gave the Siberian Husky an icy dagger. The Siberian Husky received a heavy shock, it whimpered pitifully and obediently laid on the carpet floor.

Finally the owner of the Siberian Husky that was shocked into submission was allowed to enter the room. When Ji Nan stepped into the room, her third brother changed out of his hospital gown into a casual outfit. He sat comfortably on the sofa and ate breakfast. But her third sister-in-law sat shyly behind him, third sister-in-law's face was bright red and dress was wrinkled.

Ji Nan walked toward the opened window and closed it. 'Why open the window? It's freezing inside the room.' She turned around and walked toward the coffee table in front of the sofa. She grabbed a bun and the Dewar bottle then she plumped on the sofa next to her third brother. She bit into the bun and gulped the black soy milk. 'Mmm... the bun's cold and the black soy milk is curdled.'

Chen Yu Bai was frustrated and grabbed the Dewar bottle back. He poured the rest of the black soy milk into his glass. 'Who invited you to eat?'

Ji Nan wasn't affected by her third brother's rudeness. She calmly ripped the bun into small pieces and fed it to her Cola. Then she wanted to boast about Cola to her third brother and third sister-in-law. 'Second brother gave me the Siberian Husky, its name is Cola.'

'Pepsi or Cola?' An Xiao Li joked.

Chen Yu Bai glanced at Cola after Xiao Li said its name.

Ji Nan gave An Xiao Li another bun and they fed Cola together. They played

with Cola whilst Cola happily ate the bun. An Xiao Li loved dogs and cats. An Xiao Li thought Cola looked like a noble and purebred dog, the more she admired Cola the more she adored Cola.

End of Chapter Thirteen (Part 1)

Related

part 2

Chapter Thirteen (Part 2 of 2)

‘Did you two know little Qin Song is back?’ Ji Nan asked.

Chen Yu Bai happily ate his bun and black soy milk. He nodded his head. ‘Um. Why isn’t he back at work?’

Ji Nan rubbed Cola’s head. ‘Little Qin Song’s heartbroken. I asked fifth brother about it, he knows something but doesn’t want to say.’

An Xiao Li’s hand that fed Cola the small bun piece froze... she thought about poor Mr Wild – was he heartbroken because of Qin Sang?

Ji Nan jolted when Cola was whimpering. ‘Cola?’

Chen Yu Bai glanced at the dog that intruded on him eating Xiao Li. He saw the dog was served by karma, the dog was choking on a piece of bun and threw it up and it landed in front of Xiao Li’s shoes. The dog whimpered because its stomach was hurting and its naive eyes turned to pained eyes.

Ji Nan panicked and ran to Cola. An Xiao Li put both her greasy hands up in the air. ‘It has nothing to do with me. Ji Nan asked me to feed it.’

Chen Yu Bai pulled out tissues from the coffee table and stepped toward Xiao Li. He pulled her hands closer to him and carefully wiped the grease off her hands. ‘It’s ok.’

An Xiao Li’s heart was warmed by little Bai’s sweetness.

‘I’m done eating. You can pack up my clothes. Later I’ll be leaving the hospital,’ Chen Yu Bai said calmly.

‘Why? Didn’t you say you’ll be staying back for more examinations?’ An Xiao Li asked.

An Xiao Li followed little Bai into the bathroom whilst he changed into formal wear. But no matter how she asked him, he refused to tell her why he was leaving the hospital earlier than planned.

When Rong Yan rushed to the hospital to check on Cola, Cola was already fed

indigestion pills and Cola was laying on a long bench outside on the balcony. Ji Nan squatted in front of Cola and was keeping an eye on Cola's condition.

'Can't you think a little more?' Rong Yan asked. He stepped toward Ji Nan and pulled her up. He led her back into the hospital room. 'Are you not comfortable unless you cause trouble?'

Ji Nan didn't say anything. Rong Yan's cranky mood after waking up was even scary for her.

Rong Yan finished scolding Ji Nan. Then Ji Nan hung her head and walked slowly back outside to the balcony. An Xiao Li was done packing Chen Yu Bai's clothes and she joined Ji Nan out in the balcony to play with Cola.

Rong Yan stayed inside the hospital room to talk with Chen Yu Bai.

Rong Yan sat on the sofa. 'Why are you leaving the hospital early?'

Chen Yu Bai sat on the bed and faced Rong Yan who sat on the sofa. 'The Chu household in the western district, are you familiar with them?'

Rong Yan saw Chen Yu Bai's angry expression and knew someone from the Chu household offended Chen Yu Bai. 'Whether I'm familiar with them or not, doesn't matter.'

'Is Chu Hao Ran the darling son of the Chu household?' Chen Yu Bai asked.

'Um. The Chu household are littered with trouble makers. But Chu Hao Ran has good relations with many households in the western district, especially with the Zheng household. Zheng Hao is the only son in the Zheng household and has a close brotherly bond with Chu Hao Ran. Why? Did Chu Hao Ran offend you?' Rong Yan said.

Chen Yu Bai laughed coldly.

An Xiao Li wasn't happy to be sent with Chen Yu Bai's assistant to fill out discharge forms. An Xiao Li wasn't happy because she was worried Chen Yu Bai wanted to leave the hospital too early and could have a relapse.

Ji Nan was bored without An Xiao Li's company and wandered back into the hospital room through the balcony window.

'Let's go visit little Qin Song. He's back in the district but refuses to make an

appearance. He said he came back to visit third brother in the hospital. Third brother, has he come to visit you?' Ji Nan said.

Rong Yan wrinkled his forehead and pointed at Ji Nan. 'Come down from there. Come here and sit.'

Ji Nan ran to the sofa and sat down next to Rong Yan.

Chen Yu Bai laughed. 'Little Qin Song... I think at the moment he doesn't want to visit me.'

'Huh? Is he still angry at you for sending him to the Middle East?' Ji Nan asked.

Chen Yu Bai didn't answer. He sighed on the inside – was little Qin Song still angry at him? Even though Qin Sang didn't like little Qin Song, but Chen Yu Bai felt he took away little Qin Song's opportunity to pursue Qin Sang properly.

Ji Nan scratched her head. 'It can't be. Little Qin Song isn't that petty. Didn't fifth brother say that little Qin Song was heartbroken?'

Chen Yu Bai glared coldly at Ji Nan. 'You heard wrong.'

Ji Nan was startled and turned to look at Rong Yan. Rong Yan swept her hair away from her face. 'What are you looking at? Kids don't need to worry. Go outside and play.'

Ji Nan was the most frustrated when Rong Yan saw her as a kid. She pushed his hand away from her face and left the room to search for An Xiao Li.

Rong Yan watched Ji Nan leave then he turned back to face Chen Yu Bai. 'Qin Sang and little Qin Song?'

Chen Yu Bai pushed his glasses up. 'Not exactly. Little Qin Song liked Qin Sang before Wei Ran. But Qin Sang doesn't like little Qin Song. Do you think Qin Sang is a type of person that little Qin Song can lure?'

'Oh? Then fifth brother can lure Qin Sang?' Rong Yan asked.

Chen Yu Bai smiled. 'I'm not certain. It's just the way Qin Sang looks at Wei Ran is like the same way you look at that person. So I assume it's possible.'

Rong Yan laughed and threw a pillow from the sofa at Chen Yu Bai. 'Leave!'

Chen Yu Bai caught the pillow. He looked at his watch. He felt anxious and

pursed his lips. 'Are you leaving? I want to go downstairs to see how things are.'

'Third uncle,' Rong Yan teased. He stood and laughed. 'I'm not laughing at third uncle, but you have it bad. In the past you won't like this, now the look in your eyes have changed. Who would have thought Liang's company's wicked guru has fallen into the hands of a little girl that has nothing special about her.'

Rong Yan put his hands into his pockets and leisurely stepped outside the hospital room like it was a beautiful day. Chen Yu Bai followed closely behind and calmly stuck out his leg. Rong Yan wasn't paying attention, he staggered forward a few steps and nearly injured his face.

'You don't need to talk too much about my girl,' Chen Yu Bai warned.

Chen Yu Bai coldly glared at Rong Yan and walked off.

Rong Yan stood behind Chen Yu Bai and patted his chest whilst mumbling curses.

End of Chapter Thirteen (Part 2 of 2)

Related

Chapter Fourteen

Chapter Fourteen

An Xiao Li was consoling Mr Wild at a bar. But Mr Wild was too drunk and called the nine tailed fox prince to come to the bar for a fist fight. An Xiao Li panicked and the first person she thought of was little Bai and she decided to call little Bai.

‘What happened?’ Chen Yu Bai asked in a sleepy voice.

‘Qin Song’s drunk. He called Li Wei Ran to come and have a fist fight with him,’ An Xiao Li explained.

‘Where are you?’ Chen Yu Bai asked coldly.

‘At a bar in the eastern district-’ An Xiao Li said.

‘Don’t run around wildly. I’ll be right there. If they fight each other before I get there, you need to keep your distance from them. You don’t need to dissuade them. Got it?’ Chen Yu Bai advised.

‘Oh...’ An Xiao Li said.

‘Got it?’ Chen Yu Bai asked.

‘Got it,’ An Xiao Li said.

Chen Yu Bai rushed to the bar and didn’t care about his two youngest sworn brothers killing each other. He only cared about Xiao Li. ‘An-Xiao-Li! What did you promise me on the phone before?’

An Xiao Li shook her head. ‘Quickly and pull those two apart.’

Chen Yu Bai didn’t hear clearly what Xiao Li said because of the loud music. He checked if she was injured anywhere. ‘Where are you injured?’

‘I’m not injured. Quickly pull those two apart. Mr Wild is about to be beaten to death by Li Wei Ran!’ An Xiao Li said.

‘I just left the hospital. I don’t want them to accidentally hit me and send me

back to the hospital. I've already called the police,' Chen Yu Bai explained.

Chen Yu Bai was calm but Xiao Li was really worried and wanted to go pull his two youngest sworn brothers apart. He held onto one of her arms to keep her from harm.

Finally Mr Wild and the nine tailed fox prince were dragged outside the bar. An Xiao Li saw a glimpse of their usually handsome faces were swollen and black and blue before she was forced into little Bai's car.

'Take me home,' An Xiao Li said many times in Chen Yu Bai's car.

Chen Yu Bai gripped the steering wheel and glanced at Xiao Li. 'Don't worry. Tonight I need to rest too.'

An Xiao Li glared at little Bai and turned to look out the window.

'Little Qin Song is hot headed and reckless. Just with our efforts alone won't be able to dissuade him,' Chen Yu Bai explained. He was really tired, but he saw Xiao Li sulked and pout her lips so he explained to soothe her. 'If we interfered and stopped them from fighting, next time they see each other they'll still fight. It's better to let them fight once and get it over with.'

'Then why did you let them be dragged to the police station? For them to be persuaded by the cops?' An Xiao Li asked.

'The cops won't be able to persuade them, but there's someone that can,' Chen Yu Bai said.

Chen Yu Bai kept his eyes on the road and smiled.

Chen Yu Bai wasn't in the hospital anymore and An Xiao Li didn't have a reason to skip work. For the time being she still needed to go to work, but she received a call from Chu Hao Ran when she was halfway to work. It sounded like an emergency so she had no choice but to go to the hospital.

An Xiao Li arrived at the hospital room that Chu Hao Ran gave her on the phone. She was furious! 'Chu Hao Ran, are you crazy! Why did you lie to me?'

Chu Hao Ran put the album that he was looking at down on the coffee table. His arm that wasn't in a cast anymore waved her over to sit on the sofa next to

him. He gave her his prince charming smile. 'I just wanted to see for myself if my little princess still has a conscience.'

Little princess... felt like that pet name was too unfamiliar and too beautiful. A few years ago... under moonlight and in front of a rosebush was a happy memory for An Xiao Li. Chu Hao Ran always looked at her tenderly and lovingly called her 'my little princess.'

Chu Hao Ran wasn't like the ice glacier who frustrated An Xiao Li when he stroked her hair, smiled condescendingly at her and called her 'dummy.'

'Xiao Li?' Chu Hao Ran called the dazed An Xiao Li.

'If you're ok then I'm leaving. Next time don't lie to me anymore!' An Xiao Li said.

An Xiao Li wasn't happy and was ready to leave. She was carrying little Bai's breakfast in her hand. If little Bai found out she was missing, he'd give her the cold shoulder.

Chu Hao Ran wanted to say something but decided not to. He put his arm out then let his arm fall down. An Xiao Li thought he looked like the male lead who was troubled in a romance movie, whilst he was confronting the female lead that he secretly loved in the past and the love was reignited when he saw her again.

'I know I wasn't good. But won't you wrong a bit? At that time you silently left. You didn't even call me to breakup. Did you think about what state I was in?' Chu Hao Ran said. He knew too well what to say to stall An Xiao Li. 'Xiao Li, can we see that time as us misunderstanding the situation?'

An Xiao Li looked at her first love declaring a deep love, it was effective ten percent. But she pictured in front of her was the ice glacier's cold face. Mmm... did the ice glacier wanted to drink black soy milk or eat congee with oatmeal?

'Xiao Li, the reason you're hesitating is it because of Chen Yu Bai?' Chu Hao Ran asked.

'Who says?' An Xiao Li denied. 'He doesn't have any influence over me.'

Chu Hao Ran thought what An Xiao Li denied sounded like contempt toward his rival and he smiled brightly. Whereas, An Xiao Li turned around and rushed

back to work.

The first thing An Xiao Li did when she arrived at work was going to the tea room and reheated the black soy bean that was in the Dewar bottle. Then she brought it into little Bai's office.

An Xiao Li knocked on little Bai's office door but no one responded. She thought little Bai was angry with her and opened the door herself. But he wasn't inside his office. She saw a stack of CDs on his work desk and thought he must have went to a meeting... CDs!

An Xiao Li held in her breath. She put little Bai's breakfast on the coffee table. Then she immediately searched his work desk. She had a revelation – a female's intuition was the most reliable. There was a CD with the logo of her former IT college that stuck out like a sore thumb amongst the stack of work related CDs.

On the CD logo was also one word written clearly by Chen Yu Bai... 'An.' An Xiao Li was deeply moved, she'd found the surveillance evidence!

An Xiao Li untucked her shirt and rolled her shirt up. Then she hid the CD at the back of her pants and ran outside but by the time she reached the door, it was opened.

Chen Yu Bai saw Xiao Li's mouth gaped open and she looked flustered like she was caught red handed at the scene of the crime. He only smiled and didn't expose her. 'It was an urgent meeting. I didn't have time to tell you.' He walked around her to his work desk. He tidied his work desk and sat on his chair. He was tired and rubbed his temples. He saw that she didn't move and smiled warmly. 'Why are you in a daze? Didn't sleep well? Mmm... I'll let you take the afternoon off and take a good rest, ok?'

An Xiao Li heard little Bai's tone of voice was natural and his smile was gentle. But why was it she felt a cold sweat on her back? There was nothing scarier than someone with a wicked belly pretending to be warm – what did he want to do?

The CD behind An Xiao Li's back felt cold. She felt uncomfortable and stood straight. 'Ok... then I'll go outside.'

'Um,' Chen Yu Bai said. He nodded his head and smiled. 'Go rest at my place and help me tidy my place too.'

An Xiao Li felt a little relieved, because that was more like something the ice glacier would do! Exploiting her, oppressing her... as long as it was something that didn't let her live in peace, it was more like the ice glacier she knew. In that moment she felt no resentment, because compared to him being gentle she was more familiar with him being rough.

After Chen Yu Bai's door closed, he followed the direction where he saw Xiao Li disappeared and his warm eyes turned cold.

Chen Yu Bai thought on the inside – 'An Xiao Li, I do want to learn how to conveniently follow you. But, you're really not obedient.'

An Xiao Li wondered if others were ever faced with the same situation she found herself in. She knew she shouldn't look, there was nothing worth looking at and it was best not to look... but finally, she risked everything to look.

So when An Xiao Li suddenly heard little Bai coldly asked her 'any good?' from behind her, she was deeply regretful – curiosity killed the cat! It was best to just speculate aimlessly!

Little Bai leaned against his study room and laughed coldly. An Xiao Li's hand that was holding the computer mouse made the softest clicking sound. But it didn't click on the X to close the window she wanted to hide before little Bai's hand was placed on top of her hand and clicked the mouse.

'You... didn't you leave already?' An Xiao Li asked.

Little Bai clearly dropped An Xiao Li off at his place. He changed his clothes and left. Why did he suddenly turn back? Could it be that he knew from the start that she took the CD?

An Xiao Li's whole body broke out in a cold sweat.

Little Bai knelt down and rubbed his cheek against An Xiao Li's cheek. 'I came back to get a few things.' His voice wasn't happy. 'I didn't go to your graduation day. So I asked your IT college to send me a CD that filmed the graduation ceremony and it was lucky that you were filmed in some scenes.'

Little Bai replayed the scenes that An Xiao Li appeared during the filming of the

graduation ceremony. She felt deeply guilty as the deepest ocean on earth.

An Xiao Li thought that little Bai asked her IT college to send him the CD that filmed her crashing into his car that day... she thought that he used that surveillance CD to blackmail her.

An Xiao Li thought that the CD was used to control her... she thought little Bai deliberately put the CD on his work desk to lure her into a trap so he could catch her red handed on the spot.

An Xiao Li thought little Bai was really a wicked guru.

Xiao Li lowered her head, Chen Yu Bai rubbed his cheek against her neck and gently asked in her ear. 'What's wrong?'

Little Bai was too gentle, it deeply moved An Xiao Li. In that moment she thought she wanted to be beside him for the rest of her life.

'Why are you watching this CD?' Chen Yu Bai asked.

An Xiao Li felt an electric shock and was startled from her deeply moved heart. Her tongue was knotted and she didn't how to explain the CD that was meant to be on little Bai's office work desk suddenly appeared inside the computer of his study room in his house.

'Could it be the last time I watched the CD I forgot to take it out?' Chen Yu Bai mumbled.

An Xiao Li felt like she was given an escape route and nodded her head.

Chen Yu Bai stroked Xiao Li's long hair. 'Recently my memory isn't good. I'm going to work, be good.'

Chen Yu Bai smiled and kissed Xiao Li.

An Xiao Li's face was bright red from her feeling deeply guilty. 'Oh, drive carefully.'

End of Chapter Fourteen.

Related

part 1

Chapter Fifteen (Part 1)

When Chu Hao Ran showed up unannounced at An Xiao Li's workplace, her heart freaked.

'You... what are you doing here?' An Xiao Li asked.

An Xiao Li occasionally glanced at little Bai's office door – she wanted Chu Hao Ran to disappear before little Bai's office door opened.

Chu Hao Ran smiled brightly. He leaned both his hands on An Xiao Li's work desk. 'You don't pick up my calls so I came here directly to see you. Can we have lunch this afternoon?'

'Mmm... this afternoon I have plans,' An Xiao Li declined.

'Plans with who? Chen Yu Bai?' Chu Hao Ran asked loudly.

An Xiao Li quickly covered Chu Hao Ran's mouth. He held onto her hand. 'Come work at my company. I think you'll only suffer more if you stay by Chen Yu Bai's side.'

Chu Hao Ran offered An Xiao Li a job in a casual manner, it wasn't too loud or too soft but she felt scared for her life. She quickly retrieved her hand that he held, picked up her bag and pushed him toward the door. 'Ok. We'll go eat lunch... let's go.'

Chu Hao Ran and An Xiao Li walked to the elevator. Inside the elevator she noticed that her co-workers that were in the elevator looked curious why she was with Chu Hao Ran instead of little Bai.

Chu Hao Ran glanced at the curious looks he received and he leaned a hand on An Xiao Li's shoulder.

The elevator opened to ground floor, Chu Hao Ran and An Xiao Li stepped out of the elevator and waited for a valet to bring Chu Hao Ran's car to the front of the building.

'Xiao Li, I still want to say it, I'll wait for you,' Chu Hao Ran said.

An Xiao Li was preoccupied worrying about how she was going to explain to little Bai why she didn't eat lunch with little Bai. She wasn't paying attention to what Chu Hao Ran said to her and carelessly nodded her head to pretend she was listening.

'If you're adamant that there's nothing between you and Chen Yu Bai then you've underestimated my IQ too much,' Chu Hao Ran said. He paused to assess An Xiao Li's reaction. 'Xiao Li, I'll wait for you. I'll give you time. For now continue to be beside Chen Yu Bai so you can see clearly what type of person he is. What type of person I am, you've always known, right?'

In that moment the wind swept pass and gently fluttered Chu Hao Ran's hair. He quietly looked at An Xiao Li, he didn't say anything else but she felt like his eyes spoke a thousand times a thousand words.

'Ok, you can go back up. Chen Yu Bai is a petty man. Even his love rival will need to stay on their toes to prepare for any of his sudden moves. I won't make it harder for you, go eat lunch with him,' Chu Hao Ran said. He took a step back from An Xiao Li and looked up at Chen Yu Bai's office window. He pinched her cheek. 'I'm leaving. Next time I ask you out for lunch, please don't reject me again, ok? Take a look at me. The past few days you've rejected to eat with me, made me lose my appetite and I lost a lot of weight too.'

Chu Hao Ran pretended to look unhappy on the outside whilst An Xiao Li hesitated before nodding her head.

Chen Yu Bai who saw Xiao Li nod her head from his office window felt that her nod was too cruel and he couldn't accept it.

The moment An Xiao Li returned to her work floor, she held back the feelings of being moved by Chu Hao Ran's parting words. Then she stepped into little Bai's office and asked him what he wanted to eat for lunch.

Little Bai chose the usual lunch dishes he liked but he didn't look up at An Xiao Li when he answered her.

An Xiao Li went to buy lunch dishes and brought them back to little Bai's office. They sat opposite each other and ate lunch.

Chen Yu Bai quickly ate his lunch portion. Then he wiped his hands, leaned

back on his chair and quietly watched Xiao Li eat.

An Xiao Li felt little Bai's intense gaze on her was strange and she pursed her lips that glistened from the oily dishes she ate. She smiled sweetly. 'What are you looking at? You've never seen a beautiful woman before?'

Little Bai laughed gently at An Xiao Li's bland joke. She thought her power of persuasion was strong and laughed too.

Chen Yu Bai leaned his body forward and lifted Xiao Li's chin. 'An Xiao Li, the money you owe me, starting from now has been repaid fully.'

An Xiao Li's body stiffened.

'You don't owe me anything. If you truly want to be beside Chu Hao Ran then go, I won't stop you,' Chen Yu Bai said in a serious tone.

'I've rejected him already,' An Xiao Li explained.

An Xiao Li put her chopsticks down and she didn't know why she was feeling insecure and anxious.

Little Bai didn't say anything and quietly looked at An Xiao Li with gloomy eyes. She felt her heart was drunk.

'He's Sang Sang's friend. I did love him back in college. Later Sang Sang... anyway, we've broken up. Before when you were in hospital, we met each other again,' An Xiao Li confessed.

Chen Yu Bai's cold aura was evident. 'Why didn't you say so earlier?'

An Xiao Li was also angry. 'You haven't said anything to me either. These past few days you've been preparing to change jobs, right? You've never told me about it.'

An Xiao Li was frustrated, picked up her chopsticks and chose to eat the fried egg rice. She secretly glanced once at little Bai to see his expression.

Chen Yu Bai was quiet for a while then suddenly he had an outburst. He pulled a draw from his work desk hard, took out a piece of paper and slammed it down in front of Xiao Li. He glared at her once, stood and left the room.

An Xiao Li glanced at the piece of paper in front of her. It was a form that was

only missing her signature – ‘An Xiao Li – request to transfer to Liang’s company, position as CEO Chen’s private secretary.’

The form exudes the same unruly, commanding and arrogant tone like Little Bai. An Xiao Li beamed whilst she read the form.

For a few days later, little Bai ignored An Xiao Li. Apart from exchanging work information, he didn’t bother looking at her once. At night he didn’t call her to come cook him dinner and at lunch she ate at the work cafeteria by herself.

An Xiao Li felt that little Bai’s childish behaviour was strangely loveable.

The beer belly old man finally came through for An Xiao Li, her work accommodation application was approved. After work that day, he drove her to Qin Sang’s house to pick up her suitcase.

Qin Sang wasn’t home but An Xiao Li already packed all her belongings except for her toothbrush and toothpaste the previous night. An Xiao Li carried her suitcase to the beer belly old man’s car.

On the way to An Xiao Li’s new home, she asked the beer belly old man where she’d be staying and who her housemate would be. ‘Don’t tell me it’s Lisa.’

The beer belly old man was driving and only gave An Xiao Li a sly smile before looking back at the road. ‘Rest assured, your new room is a premium room and your new housemate is also first-class.’

The beer belly old man finished explaining to Miss An and laughed a bit so Miss An wouldn’t be suspicious and ask him more questions that was hard for him to answer directly.

An Xiao Li felt uneasy that the roads in front of her gradually became familiar. She hugged her last shred of hope – perhaps her workplace offered high quality accommodation and was just located nearby little Bai’s neighbourhood.

Until the beer belly old man parked the car in front of a familiar building complex that had a familiar allotted number, An Xiao Li had a revelation. ‘Manager?’

The beer belly old man held onto Miss An’s suitcase and no matter what she

said he didn't dare to let go of her suitcase.

The door of An Xiao Li's new home opened. Little Bai wore home clothes and gave off his usual cold aura. 'Come in.'

The beer belly old man passed the suitcase in his safekeeping to little Bai. 'I won't be staying. CEO Chen, I'll leave you to welcome your new housemate. Hehe...'

The beer belly old man stopped his teasing laughter when he was given an icy dagger by little Bai. He scratched his head and quietly retreated.

Little Bai stood on the same spot as he followed the direction the beer belly old man left his home until the beer belly old man was out of sight. Then little Bai looked back at An Xiao Li, who was mimicking Qin Sang's cold confidence by crossing her arms and calmly waiting for little Bai to plead his case... but he quietly turned around and carried An Xiao Li's suitcase into his home.

An Xiao Li stood on the same spot for a few minutes and gave up, she truly couldn't mimic Qin Sang's way of dealing with difficult people to work in her favour.

An Xiao Li rubbed her tensed face and dejectedly stepped inside.

Little Bai locked himself in his study room and there were no sounds coming from his study room. An Xiao Li after unpacking and tidying up his place felt too lazy to cook and ordered dinner dishes from a restaurant to be delivered. After dinner was delivered, she poured herbal drinks into two glasses, put them on the dining table and went to his study room.

An Xiao Li knocked on the door of his study room but Little Bai was like a kid and pretended he wasn't inside.

An Xiao Li barged into little Bai's study room. 'Mr sulky, come out and eat your dinner.'

Little Bai threw something that was in his hand into a draw and coldly strode passed An Xiao Li without looking at her, straight to the dining room.

Little Bai and An Xiao Li were used to sitting opposite each other and eating

dinner quietly without feeling awkward. She saw that he was eating slowly and his complexion was poor. 'Are the dishes too hard?'

Little Bai glared at An Xiao Li.

'Little Bai, if you don't want to eat you can tell me. Then I can cook something for you to eat. But if you don't tell me then how am I supposed to know? If I don't know then you can only keep eating this hard pizza. If you want to eat then tell me, if you don't tell me how can I know, you said...' An Xiao Li nagged.

'Be-quiet!' Chen Yu Bai said through gritted teeth.

Xiao Li stopped talking, bent her head and bit a piece of pizza. Whilst Chen Yu Bai was enjoying a quiet dinner, she softly mumbled something else. 'If you don't tell me then I truly wouldn't know...'

Xiao Li's soft mumble seemed like she was putting a big emphasis on what she nagged to Chen Yu Bai before and sounded like it was a special grievance she had.

An Xiao Li tried to mimic another way Qin Sang used to deal with Miss Chen that sounded hard on the outside but was soft on the inside.

It worked, Little Bai fell for An Xiao Li's trap. His expression softened and he didn't treat her as coldly as he did during the day anymore.

An Xiao Li's new room was the guest room that she used in the past. Even though little Bai said that the house belonged to his IT company, but when she opened the door and saw the windows had pink curtains, the bedspread were changed on her behalf to a pink bedspread with pale blue roses embroidered on it. She was deeply moved – oh the weird Mr little Bai!

That night An Xiao Li thought that little Bai wanted to sulk for a longer period. But unexpectedly before she slept, he casually entered her room, pulled her bed sheet up and laid under the bed sheet next to her on the bed. Then he naturally saw her as a pillow, draped a leg over her legs and hugged her waist. He closed his eyes and pretended he was sleeping.

What little Bai didn't know was that Qin Sang also taught An Xiao Li another trick – 'treating a person the same way that person treats you.' So An Xiao Li didn't move or say anything and let him hug her.

A moment later little Bai stopped pretending he was sleeping and rolled An Xiao Li over to face him. He glared at her. 'Hehe... little Bai, you're really childish and weird.'

Chen Yu Bai was frustrated and gently pushed away Xiao Li's hand that was pinching his cheek. He didn't say anything, rolled on top of her and pressed her into the bed.

An Xiao Li was cooperative with little Bai and a moment later their night clothes were tossed away from the bed.

Chen Yu Bai's breathing increasingly became heavier and his body movements became stronger. Xiao Li used both her arms and legs to cling onto his body and she softly whispered into his ear. 'Chen Yu Bai, I love you.'

Little Bai stopped his movements then he propped a hand on each side of An Xiao Li's body to hover over her body. He looked into her eyes and she didn't know why but there seemed to be a little panic in his eyes.

Under the dim lighting of the room, Chen Yu Bai felt that Xiao Li's quiet beauty with her loose black hair on the pillow was the kind of quiet beauty that made his heart shook in strange way.

'I love you, but not to the point that I'd forsake everything because of you. So you have to treat me a little better, otherwise I'll really have a change of heart,' An Xiao Li said softly. 'I can force myself to accept your coldness throughout the day, but sometimes you also need to be a little tender too, you know?'

Chen Yu Bai saw the depth of what Xiao Li said to him echoed in her eyes – 'Little Bai, I can understand the meaning behind your actions. I'm certain I love you, that's why I want to stay beside you. But my dearest little Bai, it seemed like I don't love you that deep. So you need to be good to me, to give me a reason to be faithful to you to the end, you know?'

But it seemed to An Xiao Li that little Bai 'didn't know' because he still looked at her coldly. One second, two seconds, three seconds... her warm feelings were almost dried up but he still looked at her coldly. 'Little Bai...'

Chen Yu Bai took a deep breath. He rolled over from Xiao Li's body to his original position and hugged her from behind.

An Xiao Li inched backward for her back to lean against little Bai's chest.
'What's wrong?'

Little Bai buried his face into An Xiao Li's neck and his voice sounded frustrated. 'I forgot to buy condoms. Today isn't your safe day.'

An Xiao Li's heart was angry and embarrassed but there was a little sweetness too.

End of Chapter Fifteen (Part 1)

Related

part 2

Chapter Fifteen (Part 2 of 2)

The following morning at Chen Yu Bai's house, for breakfast were herbal drinks and custard buns.

Last night little Bai told An Xiao Li that he didn't eat enough, but he still tortured her to the middle of the night. She couldn't wake up early to cook breakfast so she used pre-made dishes.

If last night's dinner was within little Bai's tolerance then breakfast was beyond his tolerance threshold.

'I don't want to drink this,' Chen Yu Bai said. He was frustrated and pushed the hot herbal drink away from him. 'Call a restaurant. I want to eat chicken congee.'

'You've grown this big. Don't you know how to make a call?' An Xiao Li asked sarcastically.

'An-Xiao-Li! Is your skin itchy?' Chen Yu Bai asked coldly.

'Oh, this is delicious! Little Bai, little by little you're more childish. Do you want to force me to spoon you breakfast?' An Xiao Li said.

An Xiao Li picked up little Bai's herbal drink and a spoon. Then she pretended she was going to feed him the herbal drink spoon by spoon. He took back the herbal drink from her and gulped down the entire herbal drink. He stood, gave her a cold look and strode to his room to change clothes.

An Xiao Li looked at little Bai's retreating back and shook her head helplessly. Truly... that unruly kid, little by little was harder to teach.

It was the season for curses to come true. An Xiao Li was just joking, but unexpectedly the wind called forth the unruly kid's mum to his place.

Mrs Chen senior maintained her body meticulously and looked like she was just in her early forties. Her hairstyle was chic and she wore a trendy outfit.

An Xiao Li felt that she was smarter by the day. One look at the beautiful lady who stepped into little Bai's house with a set of keys and she recognised that the

beautiful lady was little Bai's mum.

As expected, the beautiful lady spoke in a polite manner to An Xiao Li. 'Hello, I'm Chen Yu Bai's mum. You are?'

An Xiao Li forced herself to swallow the custard bun. 'Hello aunty... I'm An Xiao Li.'

Mrs Chen senior smiled politely and nodded her head. After she assessed An Xiao Li, her heart was unhappy – what an uncouth girl, how could she smile with food stains on her teeth?

Little Bai didn't overreact when he saw his mum. 'Mum. Why are you here?'

'It's been a long time since you came home to visit. I came here to visit you,' Mrs Chen senior explained and smiled warmly at her son. 'Are you busy today?'

'Very busy,' Chen Yu Bai said in a tone that was a little warmer than his usual cold tone. He patted his mum's shoulder. 'I've been busy these last few days because I'm transferring back to headquarters. I really don't have free time today. I'll come home early for dinner. Mum, can you cook me your soup?'

Mrs Chen senior was really happy when she heard her son said that he wanted to eat soup that she cooked. She nodded her head and spoke gently. 'Then I'll stay here and wait for you. Make sure you come home early.'

'Xiao Li, you don't need to come to work today. Take a day off and stay home with my mum,' Chen Yu Bai said. He patted Xiao Li's cheek, but it wasn't enough for him. He bent down and hugged her. 'Get my briefcase for me, I'm going to work. Mum, I'm leaving.'

After little Bai left for work, An Xiao Li hid in the bathroom and called Qin Sang.

'Little Bai's mum is here. She's in the kitchen, ten metres from me. Little Bai went to work, he asked me to stay with... his mum!' An Xiao Li said in a panicked tone.

'You timid thing,' Qin Sang mumbled.

An Xiao Li couldn't hear Qin Sang clearly. 'What?'

'It's nothing. What are you thinking?' Qin Sang said.

‘Mmm... I still like my Miss Chen’s rough and direct mum style more. I don’t like little Bai’s mum’s elegant and refined style,’ An Xiao Li confessed.

‘Get to the point! I’m outside at the moment, it’s freezing to death!’ Qin Sang said.

‘Huh? Then why aren’t you inside?’ An Xiao Li asked.

‘Wei Ran’s sleeping,’ Qin Sang said.

‘Qin-Sang! You two! You two...’ An Xiao Li said.

‘Yes! Yes... we’ve done it. Hurry up, anything else?’ Qin Sang said.

An Xiao Li was choked and speechless.

‘An-Xiao-Li!’ Qin Sang called.

‘Oh... I’m here,’ An Xiao Li said. She poked her head out of the bathroom door and spied on Mrs Chen senior who was happily prepping in the kitchen. ‘Sang Sang, little Bai’s not coming home until dinner! His mum is preparing dinner. Do you think she’s the type of woman that sees me as a trespasser?’

‘All mums are like that. You, stay strong and be your true self for her to see!’ Qin Sang said.

‘Why? Isn’t the first thing I need to do is pretend I’m an obedient and ladylike then after I marry into their household I can show my true self?’ An Xiao Li said.

‘Are you certain you can marry into their household?’ Qin Sang asked.

‘As if I want to marry into their household!’ An Xiao Li denied, poked her head out the bathroom again and shook her head.

‘Honestly, An Xiao Li, be yourself. Despite your IQ, you have a lot of loveable traits that over time little Bai’s mum can’t help but love you,’ Qin Sang said and hung up.

Mrs Chen senior finished prepping dinner and tidied up the kitchen. Then she cooked simple dishes for lunch and sat opposite to An Xiao Li at the dining table to eat lunch.

An Xiao Li’s cooking skills stopped at making sure raw food was fully cooked. That was why apart from washing vegetables and simple tasks like chopping she

wasn't a big help to Mrs Chen senior in the kitchen. She knew that was the first strike against her in Mrs Chen senior's eyes.

Whilst having lunch Mrs Chen senior smiled politely with An Xiao Li. 'Miss An.'

An Xiao Li gave Mrs Chen senior a friendly smile. 'Aunty you can call me Xiao Li.'

Mrs Chen senior sipped a spoonful of soup broth. 'Miss An, how many family members do you have?'

An Xiao Li sighed on the inside – in a blink of an eye Mrs Chen senior forgot that it was ok to call her Xiao Li.

'I have a dad and a mum. I'm the only child in my family,' An Xiao Li said honestly.

'Oh. What do your respectable parents do for a living?' Mrs Chen senior asked.

'Aunty you're too flattering, my parents are both teachers,' An Xiao Li said.

'What distinguished parents you have,' Mrs Chen senior said. She laughed politely. 'No wonder Miss An has such an aura! Your educated family isn't like my family. The past generations have all been business minded, Yu Bai since he was a child, his schooling isn't much to boast about. This time it seems like climbing too high.'

An Xiao Li nodded her head. 'Aunty don't worry, my parents are good people. They won't look down on Yu Bai.'

Mrs Chen senior lifted her chin and smiled politely. After she heard An Xiao Li's response, her long fingers that held a glass, trembled a little.

At night Chen Yu Bai arrived home and found his mum cooking and Xiao Li was helping his mum in the kitchen. A fragrant scent floated from the kitchen to the rest of the house and enhanced the warm scene in the kitchen.

Chen Yu Bai stood at the kitchen door and called his mum.

Mrs Chen senior was really happy to see her son was home and she left the kitchen under An Xiao Li's care. She stepped toward her son and pulled her son outside the kitchen to chat.

Chen Yu Bai exchanged a few words with his mum before finally arriving at the topic he wanted to hear.

‘This girl, are you serious about her?’ Mrs Chen senior asked softly.

Chen Yu Bai looked into the kitchen, smiled and nodded his head. He assessed his mum’s expression, but the look in her eyes wasn’t as happy as he imagined.

‘I don’t like her,’ Mrs Chen senior said. She sighed. ‘Think about it carefully. We’re not looking for someone from an established family to climb high, but at least it needs to be someone suitable. For now I won’t discuss this matter with your dad.’

‘I’ll inform dad myself!’ Chen Yu Bai said coldly and loud enough to be heard from the kitchen.

After dinner, Mrs Chen senior left and little Bai’s complexion became gloomy. So An Xiao Li quickly tidied the dining room and kitchen then she went into the living room and watched TV to hide from his bad mood.

But little Bai followed An Xiao Li into the living room. He sat quietly on the sofa next to her for a while then grilled her. ‘Were you happy being with my mum today?’

‘It was ok,’ An Xiao Li said and thought for a while. ‘Your mum is a good person. She smiled with me the whole day.’

‘Oh. Anything else?’ Chen Yu Bai asked.

‘Mmm... nothing else,’ An Xiao Li said. She thought more about the day and recounted it to little Bai. ‘In the morning after you left, aunty went to buy ingredients to cook and came back to prepare for dinner... in the afternoon we ate lunch together... aunty napped after lunch and I surfed the net... Oh! Aunty asked about my family, how many people and what my parents did for a living. Your mum flattered my family too much and said that you’re climbing high because of me.’

An Xiao Li was smiling happily but little Bai wasn’t happy. ‘Your mum said that you’re not good at studying and that I have distinguished parents. But I said, I won’t look down on you.’

Chen Yu Bai fell into a state of speechlessness. He just sat shoulder to shoulder with Xiao Li on the sofa and they watched TV together.

‘Does that count as meeting your parents?’ An Xiao Li asked sweetly and leaned on little Bai’s shoulder.

Chen Yu Bai laughed coldly and Xiao Li pinched his arm hard. He held her hands to stop her from pinching him. ‘Since I cancelled your debt, it seems little by little you don’t know what fear is.’

An Xiao Li’s whole body was trapped against little Bai’s chest. ‘It’s not from when you cancelled my debt. It started since I realised you sincerely liked me, that’s why little by little I don’t know what fear is.’

Chen Yu Bai was startled. He sighed. ‘An Xiao Li...’ He hugged her tighter. ‘Sometimes I’m suspicious whether you’re a genius or not.’

‘Huh?’ An Xiao Li asked.

‘You were naturally too smart then turned into a dummy,’ Chen Yu Bai explained.

An Xiao Li felt that little Bai was mocking her and called her a dummy. But before she could retaliate, her body was flattened on the sofa and laid underneath his body. He sucked on her lips and sighed. ‘It’s nothing, Miss dummy... I’m here.’

That night little Bai was incredibly overexcited than usual, and tangled with her all night.

Finally An Xiao Li couldn’t take it anymore and despite the heavy pressure on her body she fell asleep.

In the hazy night, Chen Yu Bai sucked Xiao Li’s soft neck and his eyes shone brightly with tenderness.

Even though it’d be a struggle and tedious to battle with his stubborn old man, but because of Miss dummy who was a fresh new flavour... it seemed worthy.

Chen Yu Bai remembered how his parents are always prideful. But his mum was made speechless by Miss dummy, he couldn’t help but laugh. He carefully climbed down from Xiao Li’s sleeping body. He smiled and hugged her. They

hugged each other and slept through the good night.

End of Chapter Fifteen (Part 2 of 2)

Related

Chapter Sixteen

Chapter Sixteen

Li Wei Ran quickly recovered from his fever. It was nearly the end of the year and Chen Yu Bai ordered Li Wei Ran to hurry up and start managing the IT company. Li Wei Ran didn't want to go to work straight after he just regained his health, but he couldn't refuse Chen Yu Bai's order.

Qin Sang was forced to request two weeks leave from her workplace, because Li Wei Ran didn't want to be separated from her a single minute. She went to help him with the handover of management at his new workplace and they were inseparable.

Suddenly the IT company's employees felt their workplace was lively during the first two weeks of the change in management. Their former CEO Chen and his 'little dummy' were joined at the hip and the new CEO Li brought along with him a 'flower vase.' It seemed to the employees that the little dummy and flower vase were really close too. The employees were also unanimous that the saying 'birds of a feather flock together' was true.

But none of the employees knew that even though CEO Chen and the flower vase validated 'birds of a feather flock together,' they didn't see eye to eye. No matter if they only met each other once in a blue moon, they'd exchange sharp daggers with one another if they were in the same room together.

Chen Yu Bai glared icily at Qin Sang the 'tigress' and closed the file he was reading. 'If you interfere with Xiao Li's private matters again, I'll take it out on your Wei Ran.'

Chen Yu Bai was unhappy that the plans he envisioned were led astray in a different direction. He wasn't pleased that the tigress easily persuaded his little dummy with a few words, he didn't doubt that the tigress was the one 'directing' his little dummy to divert his plans he envisioned for him and his little dummy.

Qin Sang didn't take Chen Yu Bai's threat to heart. 'Do you want to guess what happens if you take it out on my Wei Ran? If I'll push Xiao Li in Chu Hao Ran's

direction or not?’

‘You-dare?’ Chen Yu Bai asked coldly through gritted teeth.

‘You-can-try-for-yourself!’ Qin Sang threatened.

Two violent people who met up with each other, gave An Xiao Li a shock. An Xiao Li’s work day was busy and when she came back to work from a quick break was shocked speechless by the scene she witnessed in a spacious and quiet hallway – her man and her accomplice together. Little Bai closed a file and was handsome as the sky was high. Qin Sang held a fragrant cup of coffee and Qin Sang’s beauty glowed a wide distance. Little Bai and Qin Sang were staring at each other, without speaking a word and they stood close together in a spacious and quiet hallway.

An Xiao Li felt a rush of jealousy and was about to open her mouth but after she stepped closer to them, she froze and couldn’t say anything – it wasn’t good, there was a murderous aura given off by little Bai and Qin Sang.

‘The two of you... are fighting with each other?’ An Xiao Li asked weakly.

Little Bai and Qin Sang were glaring at each other and snorted. Little Bai pushed his glasses up, Qin Sang flicked her hair and pursed her lips. The two of them gave each other a parting sharp dagger before they split up. Little Bai stepped toward An Xiao Li and Qin Sang held her cup of coffee and stepped inside Li Wei Ran’s new office.

An Xiao Li tugged little Bai’s shirt sleeve. ‘Were you and Sang Sang fighting?’

‘I don’t like that girl,’ Chen Yu Bai said coldly.

An Xiao Li nodded her head as though she understood perfectly. ‘Um. I understand. The same kind of species should stay away from each other.’

Chen Yu Bai was prepared to explain to Xiao Li why Qin Sang was a tigress who Xiao Li should distance herself from. But Miss dummy’s way of thinking differed to others, she didn’t asked him why he didn’t like Qin Sang, because she had her own way of thinking even though it was a weird way.

But the reality was Chen Yu Bai knew his little dummy had her own kingdom that was richer than anyone. He let go of his plans to break apart her and the

tigress. He helplessly rubbed Xiao Li's head, as long as she liked the tigress, he'd accept it.

'Xiao Li, you're really good so you don't need to ask Qin Sang for advice, you know?' Chen Yu Bai said tactfully after careful thought.

In that moment An Xiao Li's heart was only set on little Bai going downstairs to buy her sweet desserts so she nodded her head and went along with anything he said.

The following day Li Wei Ran racked his head to find a foster home for his darling husky. Qin Sang hated dogs and cats, whereas he loved dogs and cats but not as much as he loved Qin Sang. His first brother wasn't a viable choice, because Gu Yan was allergic to dogs and cats like his sixth brother. His second brother and fourth brother switched off their phones... so he drove his husky to his third brother's house.

When Li Wei Ran and his husky arrived at his third brother's house, he didn't know if his feeling of gratefulness surpassed his feeling of awkwardness from being a third wheel. His third sister-in-law disregarded him the moment she saw his husky. She bear gripped his third brother's throat, kissed his third brother and begged his third brother at the same time to let his husky stay at his third brother's house.

Li Wei Ran knew his third brother was putting on an act of annoyance being clung onto by his third sister-in-law, but on the inside his third brother was really happy. It was just hard for him to adjust to the new Chen Yu Bai, because in the past he'd never seen Chen Yu Bai allowed anyone to get that close the way An Xiao Li was close to Chen Yu Bai.

Chen Yu Bai admitted to himself that he was eerily similar to Qin Sang in one aspect – he didn't care much for animals apart from humans. But Miss dummy was happy enough to jump on him and shower him with kisses that he didn't have the heart to tell his fifth brother to take that dog and scam far away.

Chen Yu Bai was unhappy that dog only licked Xiao Li's palm and it made her happy like crazy. A moment ago she was hugging him, but she quickly switched from hugging him to that dog. 'Wow! Little Bai, let's give it a name!'

It was evident Chen Yu Bai had no interest naming that dog. He still had contracts he wanted to discuss with Li Wei Ran through webcam, but it was good that Li Wei Ran came to his door and they could discuss it in person.

‘What about calling it little Black?’ Li Wei Ran suggested.

Little Bai gave Li Wei Ran a murderous look and Li Wei Ran didn’t dare to utter a sound.

Li Wei Ran obediently followed little Bai to the study room, but Li Wei Ran turned back and mouthed to An Xiao Li – ‘Call it Seven Up.’

In the afternoon Qin Sang cooked a hearty lunch for Li Wei Ran but he brought back three extra strays for lunch. She cooked sweet and sour pork ribs, soy bean cakes and fish dishes that he liked.

Li Wei Ran was in a tug a war using chopsticks with Rong Yan to get the last rib. Unexpectedly, Chen Yu Bai pushed his glasses up and stole the last rib off them.

‘Little Bai, don’t you know how to save the best for me?’ An Xiao Li asked in a frustrated tone.

Chen Yu Bai licked the corner of his lips. ‘Um, want to eat?’

Chen Yu Bai’s shady tone made three people at the dining table wanted to yell ‘get a room.’

After lunch, Chen Yu Bai drove himself and Xiao Li back home.

Unlike the chilly weather outside, inside the car was toasty warm. Xiao Li played a song that he didn’t know the name of, it was sang in a low key. She sang along to the song in a way that made his usual cold heart, melt a little.

‘Did the two of you know each other since you were kids?’ Chen Yu Bai asked?

‘Um. We were born on the same day at the same hospital! I’m older than her by two hours,’ An Xiao Li said and laughed. ‘But it’s always her that’s protecting me.’

‘Actually Sang Sang isn’t that hard to get close to as most people think. She’s just sees clearly the difference between a friend and a person who’s passing by.

So she doesn't keep many friends. When she was a kid she wasn't like how she is now. She changed in the third grade. Her dad came and took her away and that's when she started to become the cold Sang Sang, yikes...' An Xiao Li said too much and stopped talking before she blabbed uncontrollably.

'What is it?' Chen Yu Bai asked.

'Mmm... Qin Sang doesn't like me talking about her childhood to outsiders,' An Xiao Li said.

Chen Yu Bai used his free hand to hold Xiao Li's hand and spoke gently to her. 'Am I an outsider?'

An Xiao Li was seduced by little Bai's handsome looks and gentle tone – she blabbed uncontrollably. 'Sang San and I grew up in the same hometown. She didn't have a dad when she was a kid but she was a bubbly kid. Our teachers referred to us as the rare couple. Then one day, a fancy car came and took her away. I cried until I died and came back to life. Even Miss Chen couldn't stop me crying a waterfall. It wasn't until when I was older that I heard someone say that her mum, Miss Ye was once a rich playboy's lover. Miss Ye secretly gave birth to Sang Sang. When Sang Sang's dad found out, he wanted to acknowledge Sang Sang as his daughter.'

Chen Yu Bai glanced at the black night sky above the road and smiled – fifth brother was doomed.

End of Chapter Sixteen

Related

Chapter Seventeen

Chapter Seventeen

At night, An Xiao Li was doomed.

An Xiao Li sneezed and got a bad feeling. She sneakily checked her phone.

Just before bed, Chu Hao Ran called An Xiao Li to wish her a good night. Then it was like little Bai received an electric shock and tortured An Xiao Li to the middle of the night. Finally she couldn't take it anymore, she cried and begged for mercy. After she took the initiative and promised little Bai she wouldn't take Chu Hao Ran's calls anymore, little Bai reluctantly released her.

What An Xiao Li feared most in the world wasn't little Bai grilling her why she sneaked around to stay in contact with another man – it was little Bai not saying anything, but forced her to admit her mistake and promise him that she wouldn't dare to make the same mistake again.

Chen Yu Bai left Xiao Li's room and went back to his room. His phone rang, it was Li Wei Ran. Li Wei Ran admitted to him that Li Wei Ran took Qin Sang to her hometown to discuss marriage with Qin Sang's mum.

Chen Yu Bai was listening to Li Wei Ran talking when Qin Sang interrupted them.

'Chen Yu Bai, perhaps you need to clear your schedule for two days to come here,' Qin Sang said.

Chen Yu Bai was certain that those two said something about Xiao Li and him to Xiao Li's parents. 'What is it?'

'Xiao Li... perhaps, in a few days her dad will summon her home,' Qin Sang said.

'Ok, I know. Xiao Li and I will see you and Li Wei Ran tomorrow or the day after,' Chen Yu Bai said. He looked through his work schedule, crossed out some appointments and rescheduled them for different days. 'Give the phone back to your Wei Ran.'

Chen Yu Bai heard Qin Sang laughed at his sticky situation having to meet Xiao

Li's parents before Qin Sang gave the phone back to Li Wei Ran. 'If you want to be transferred back to headquarters in spring then tell your Qin Sang to know her place.'

Li Wei Ran laughed joyfully at the hint of anxiety in Chen Yu Bai's tone. 'Third brother, did you know that your future father-in-law and your old man share the same interest? They both like reading teachings from their other half's book. You're truly blessed!'

Chen Yu Bai laughed coldly. 'Fifth brother, did you know that your future father-in-law and your old man are similar too? They both struggle to hang onto their faces.'

Li Wei Ran immediately backed far away from Qin Sang and spoke in a soft voice. 'What does that mean?'

'It just means what it sounds like on face value,' Chen Yu Bai said and hung up.

Li Wei Ran heard the dead connection and got a bad feeling.

The following night, in the living room An Xiao Li sat on the sofa and felt an electric shock flowed throughout her body after she received her dad's summon.

An Xiao Li's dad was An Bu San. An Bu San was a renowned history teacher. He was head hunted by many famous schools and colleges, but he wasn't even interested in the slightest and easily rejected all their offers. An Xiao Li never knew why her dad chose to spend his life teaching in a small town high school.

In relation to An Bu San's educating his only child, An Xiao Li. He was a traditional stern dad but he was also gentle. His expectations of his daughter's level of common knowledge was quite high. He balanced out criticisms and encouragement to ensure his daughter was adequately educated. He strictly instilled in his daughter the importance of having a sense of duty and to be a trust worthy person.

Naturally, all the requirements An Bu San set for his daughter were endorsed by Miss Chen – in other words, An Bu San feared his wife.

So after An Xiao Li was lectured by her dad that echoed his wife's sentiments

for more than half an hour, she strongly requested to speak directly with Miss Chen.

‘Don’t dream about me helping you. You better obediently get your butt here by tomorrow morning. Then you’ll see how I’ll deal with you,’ Miss Chen said fiercely.

An Xiao Li laughed sweetly. ‘Miss Chen, why is it that I feel my mum speaking in such a scary tone in front of her husband isn’t a good thing?’

Chen Yu Bai who was looking at his work papers next to Xiao Li on the sofa, looked up and laughed when he heard her dared to tease her mum.

Miss Chen was indeed choked and was speechless for a while. ‘Do you have a lover already?’

An Xiao Li glared at little Bai before answering Miss Chen. ‘Mmm... yes.’

‘What stage are you at?’ Miss Chen asked.

‘Huh?’ An Xiao Li asked.

‘Have you met the parents?’ Miss Chen asked.

‘Mmm... yes,’ An Xiao Li said.

‘Bring him home for New Year,’ Miss Chen ordered.

‘Mmm... yes...’ An Xiao Li said.

‘Did you hear me?’ Miss Chen asked.

‘Yes!’ An Xiao Li said.

The lioness roar beneath Miss Chen’s tone was felt by An Xiao Li who was at a far distance away from her hometown. It threatened her to death. She sat upright on the sofa, little Bai was startled by her sudden movement and he looked up from his work papers and stared at her.

An Xiao Li hung up and awkwardly laughed with little Bai.

Before bed time, unexpectedly little Bai didn’t sneak into her room. She waited for a long time, she was sleepy to the point it was a struggle to keep her eyes opened but he still didn’t come into her room. She was forced to go outside and check for herself. There was no light from his study room so she went to check

his room. She gently opened the door of his room and saw him sleeping on his bed.

An Xiao Li thought for a while then slowly crept the door closed to go back to her room. She decided she'd find an opportunity tomorrow to talk to little Bai about visiting her parents with her.

Under the darkness of Chen Yu Bai's room, he sat up on his bed. 'What is it?'

An Xiao Li felt like she was intentionally stalking little Bai so she stood at the door and didn't make a sound. She hoped that his room was too dark and he'd think that it was Seven Up passing by his room.

Unexpectedly, little Bai turned on the bedside table light. An Xiao Li didn't have time to hide and was forced to laugh awkwardly with him who wrinkled his forehead.

'You're not asleep yet?' An Xiao Li reluctantly asked.

Chen Yu Bai looked at his bed then stared at Xiao Li. 'What do you think?'

An Xiao Li's throat was choked and she couldn't say anything and decided to leave. 'Hehe... good night!'

An Xiao Li felt embarrassed for being caught checking on him and turned around to escape.

'Xiao Li,' Chen Yu Bai called. Xiao Li stiffly turned around and she assessed his smile. 'Come here.'

An Xiao Li quietly entered little Bai's room, closed his door, got on his bed and laid under the bed sheet. She also quietly leaned her head against his shoulder. She could smell little Bai's usual cool mint scent that she was familiar with. Even though it was winter, when the cool mint scent was inhaled into her nose, it gave her a sense of warmth. He turned off the light, laid down on the bed and gently wrapped an arm around her shoulder and pulled her against his chest.

In the past little Bai didn't sleep well, he'd pull all the window curtains closed so there wouldn't be a single spot of light in his room. It was so dark in the room that An Xiao couldn't see whether his eyes were closed or opened. She could only feel his warm breath lightly exhaled on top of her head, his breath was

gentle as a butterfly flapping its wings.

Little Bai only hugged An Xiao Li, breathed gently and it seemed like he was asleep. Her heart wanted her to ask him to reassure its deepest insecurities but she didn't dare open her mouth. A long time later she couldn't take her heart pestering her and rolled away from him. The moment she moved, he mumbled to her. 'What's wrong?'

An Xiao Li thought she was bothering little Bai's sleep so she mumbled 'it's nothing' and inched further away from him.

Little Bai turned the light on and pulled An Xiao Li back against his chest. He lifted her chin and it seemed like his eyes were laughing. 'Usually after you lay down for three minutes you'll be snoring, and you say it's nothing?'

An Xiao Li bent her head and bit little Bai's index finger. He laughed and he moved his index finger to play with her tongue.

'Little Bai, right now, what are we to each other?' An Xiao Li asked softly but her heart pounded loudly.

'What do you think?' Chen Yu Bai asked.

'Giving living together a try?' An Xiao Li asked.

Little Bai narrowed his eyes and gently rested his chin on An Xiao Li's forehead. 'Um.'

'My parents said that for New Year I should take my boyfriend home,' An Xiao Li said.

An Xiao Li curled her body and rested her head on little Bai's chest. She heard his heart pounded rapidly and she waited for his answer that was important to her.

Little Bai adjusted the bed sheet on An Xiao Li's back and spoke in his usual cold tone. 'Work is closed for New Year starting on the 28th, in the afternoon on the 30th we'll go together to your hometown to celebrate New Year with your family. On the 2nd we'll go visit my family.'

An Xiao Li's body was tensed for a little while but sleep slowly beckoned her. She thought little Bai's plan sounded good so she mumbled 'ok,' and sleep

prevailed over her.

Chen Yu Bai waited until Xiao Li's breathing was steady before he lifted the bed sheet and pulled her body into his chest and hugged her. He felt that in the world there wasn't a female who was more of a dummy than her. Didn't she want him to give her a status? He was waiting for her next question, he wanted to... tell her what she wanted to hear long ago, but he couldn't believe she fell asleep.

'An Xiao Li, after next year, I'll marry you,' Chen Yu Bai softly whispered in An Xiao Li's ear.

Little Bai and An Xiao Li arrived at her hometown as planned. Li Wei Ran and Qin Sang picked them up at the terminal. An Xiao Li was jealous when she saw Li Wei Ran and Qin Sang's jackets were the same style, one wore black and the other one wore red. What made An Xiao Li more jealous was the lovey dovey way they were holding hands and walking together at a snail pace.

So when little Bai and An Xiao Li got into the car before Li Wei Ran and Qin Sang, she asked him to step on the accelerator to leave the eyesore lovebirds behind – if they loved each other that dearly, then the two of them could walk slowly home together!

Chen Yu Bai didn't understand what mood Xiao Li was in but he still listened to her. He didn't know what would happen later when he met Miss Chen with Xiao Li, how Xiao Li would bare her fangs and claws.

Xiao Li's family home was on the fifth floor of a building accommodation provided by the school that her parents taught at, but there was no elevator installed in the building. So he carried the New Year gifts and walked upstairs whilst she followed from behind and he could hear her breathing was heavier as they walked passed each floor.

After An Xiao Li arrived at her parents' home, she lifted her exhausted arm and knocked on the front door. The front door opened one second after her knock. It was Miss Chen who opened the front door and she thought that Miss Chen must have heard footsteps earlier and waited behind the door.

Miss Chen stretched out her chubby hands from under her thick sweater sleeve and smiled enough for the wrinkles of her eyes to be clearly seen. ‘This rotten girl, you’re finally home – Yu Bai?’

An Xiao Li was confused at the scene in front of her. Inside Miss Chen’s arms were outstretched in mid-air, mouth wide opened and looked too surprised. Outside An Xiao Li looked at little Bai who was smiling and made her more confused when he greeted Miss Chen. ‘Aunt, long time no see.’

End of Chapter Seventeen

Related

part 1

Chapter Eighteen (Part 1)

Miss Chen was overwhelmed to the point her eyes were brimmed with tears.

An Bu San was sitting on the sofa waiting for his daughter and his future son-in-law to arrive. Unexpectedly the young man that arrived with his daughter was his wife's nephew instead of his future son-in-law. He sat next to Chen Yu Bai on the sofa but didn't say anything.

An Bu San didn't say anything but he fared better than his daughter.

An Xiao Li was in her room for half an hour still unpacking her suitcase – Chen Yu Bai... Miss Chen's nephew.

That year, the teen boy that didn't say a lot and wore a white school uniform... the weird teen boy who had a bedroom that took up a whole floor, but only put a bed and a table in his room... the cold teen boy only looked at An Xiao Li with cold eyes, but made her scared enough to cry... her 'cousin' who only stayed with her for one afternoon, but she only needed to hear Miss Chen mentioned his name and she'd cry loudly...

Chen Yu Bai was actually her 'cousin' Chen Yu Bai.

An invisible hand pulled An Xiao Li into a lifeless cold abyss, there were no sounds of clocks, no time, it was just her dummy self who laid in a vase looking at the lively world around her.

Little Bai, you... how could you treat me in that way?

When Qin Sang and Li Wei Ran arrived at An Xiao Li's family home, they saw Miss Chen was excitedly mincing meat in the kitchen to make dumplings. An Bu San was in the study room, he held a magnifying glass to verify the authenticity of objects from the Song Dynasty. There were two wooden chairs next to a coffee table, An Xiao Li sat unusually quiet in one chair and Chen Yu Bai sat in the other chair with his head bent whilst drinking tea.

Li Wei Ran gently knocked on the study room door. An Bu San quickly looked up and saw Qin Sang and the young man who'd been playing chess with him the

last few days. He quickly ordered his daughter to pour tea for them.

An Xiao Li in her dazed state left the study room. Qin Sang saw her best friend's pale complexion and knew it was bad and followed her best friend outside.

As Qin Sang feared, An Xiao Li went straight outside the front door instead of going to the kitchen. Qin Sang followed An Xiao Li to the terrace on the sixth floor that was their sanctuary since they were kids.

The white snow covered the terrace looked beautiful and pristine. But An Xiao Li took one step on the snowy terrace floor and lost her balance.

Qin Sang was late one step, she stretched out her hand to hold onto An Xiao Li but they both fell down onto the snowy terrace floor. They both cried out in pain.

Qin Sang grabbed snow with her hand and smeared it on An Xiao Li's face. 'You dummy!'

The cold snow on An Xiao Li's face made her burst into tears and she cried loudly. Her cry echoed far and wide that could even be heard from the school's field.

Qin Sang panicked. She quickly removed her gloves and wiped An Xiao Li's tears. 'I'm sorry. I'm really sorry.'

The more Qin Sang apologised, the louder An Xiao Li cried. Qin Sang resorted to covering An Xiao Li's mouth. 'If you continue to cry, I'll stuff my gloves into your mouth!'

An Xiao Li believed Qin Sang was cold blooded enough to go through with the threat so she stopped crying immediately and wiped her tears.

Qin Sang pulled An Xiao Li up. They walked further along the terrace until they reached a set of stairs that led to the water tank that was their secret sanctuary.

An Xiao Li and Qin Sang sat on the stairs in front of the water tank. An Xiao Li looked up at the dark sky. Qin Sang didn't ask her what was wrong so it made her want to confess her grievances more. 'Sang Sang, Chen Yu Bai is Miss Chen's nephew!'

‘Huh?’ Qin Sang asked.

‘I’m certain from the start he recognised who I was, when we were younger we met each other once,’ An Xiao Li said.

‘Then why didn’t you recognise him?’ Qin Sang asked.

‘Because... Miss Chen brought me to his house and the moment I finished introducing myself, he scared me to tears... Sang Sang, what do you think? Did he seek me out on purpose? Miss Chen’s family always hated my dad and me. Do you think they sent Chen Yu Bai to purposely get close to me?’ An Xiao Li said.

‘Um. I think that’s a possibility,’ Qin Sang said in a serious tone.

Even though Qin Sang’s tone was serious, but An Xiao Li felt that Qin Sang saw her suspicions as a joke. An Xiao Li’s weak state couldn’t take it and she screamed loudly, which startled Qin Sang.

‘It’s true! Why don’t you believe me?’ An Xiao Li asked. She shook Qin Sang’s body fiercely. ‘Why are you so calm about it? Did you know about his scheme long ago? Tell me!’

Qin Sang let An Xiao Li have her crazy outburst. Finally An Xiao Li was tired from shaking Qin Sang too much and An Xiao Li sobbed.

‘Xiao Li, right now are you confused?’ Qin Sang asked.

An Xiao Li covered her teary face with her hands and nodded her head. It started from the afternoon she arrived at her parents’ house, she felt that the world wasn’t genuine.

An Xiao Li felt that the world turned crazy... that one loud noise would cause the world to collapse.

Qin Sang’s phone rang, it was Li Wei Ran who naturally asked where they were, because they took a long time to pour tea.

‘We’re admiring the snow. We’ll be back later. Yes, I know, we’ll be back before dinner. Make sure you don’t call Chen Yu Bai third brother in front of Xiao Li’s parents! I’ll explain it to you later. All you need to do is follow Chen Yu Bai’s lead,’ Qin Sang said and hung up.

Qin Sang rubbed An Xiao Li’s head. ‘Don’t cry anymore. First you need to listen

to Chen Yu Bai's explanation.'

That night, Ye Dao, Qin Sang and Li Wei Ran ate dumplings at An Xiao Li's family home. Miss Chen didn't say a lot but it was obvious to everyone that her nephew was her pride and joy.

Since Xiao Li and Qin Sang returned, Chen Yu Bai always kept his eyes on Xiao Li. He knew Xiao Li cried before because her eyes were swollen. It started since he called Miss Chen 'aunt,' Xiao Li didn't look at him once or smiled with him. He felt that Xiao Li was really petty.

Chen Yu Bai put down his chopsticks, wiped his mouth with a tissue and smiled with Miss Chen. He was about to say something to Miss Chen, but Miss Chen suddenly turned toward Xiao Li. 'You said you'll bring your boyfriend home. Where is he?'

An Bu San and Ye Dao acted naturally, but Li Wei Ran and Qin Sang sat upright in their chairs at the same time. Chen Yu Bai put his hand under the table and fumbled for Xiao Li's hand, but she avoided his touch. Xiao Li put her hands on the table and finally lifted her head. 'My boyfriend... couldn't come.'

Miss Chen raised her eyebrows. An Bu San shook his head. 'The so-called...'

'Be quiet!' Miss Chen ordered.

An Bu San swallowed the rest of his words down his throat.

Miss Chen looked at An Xiao Li and it seemed like Miss Chen wasn't happy with An Xiao Li. In that moment An Xiao Li was calmer. 'We broke up, I don't love him anymore.'

Xiao Li said she didn't love Chen Yu Bai calmly, but it soured his complexion.

Miss Chen couldn't use her chopsticks in front of everyone and was forced to wait for the next opportunity to use her chopsticks. She knocked Xiao Li's forehead hard. 'What do you want me to say?'

Miss Chen wanted to knock Xiao Li's forehead more, but Chen Yu Bai stopped her.

'Aunt, you're still so fierce,' Chen Yu Bai said.

Miss Chen laughed and didn't reprimand Xiao Li anymore.

Chen Yu Bai responded to Miss Chen and glanced at Xiao Li who sat next to him at the same time. He saw Xiao Li's eyes were brimmed with tears before she bent her head and quietly swallowed her dumpling.

End of Chapter Eighteen (Part 1)

Related

part 2

Chapter Eighteen (Part 2 of 2)

An Xiao Li's family home on the fifth floor was the same layout as the other floors in the building, it only included one large bedroom and one small bedroom. Qin Sang's family home was below An Xiao Li's family home, on the fourth floor. Qin Sang was able to share the large bedroom with her mum, Ye Dao and Li Wei Ran could sleep in the small bedroom.

An Xiao Li's sleeping arrangement wasn't easily solved as Qin Sang's sleeping arrangement. Since Chen Yu Bai was visiting as Miss Chen's nephew, An Xiao Li didn't have a place to sleep. Miss Chen gave Chen Yu Bai the special treatment and she didn't hesitate to boot An Xiao Li downstairs to squeeze in the same bed as Ye Dao and Qin Sang.

An Xiao Li wore a night shirt with a cartoon printed on it and she hugged her white rabbit to the living room of her family home and refused to go downstairs.

Miss Chen's order wasn't up for negotiation so when she saw An Xiao Li standing stubbornly in the living room, she couldn't hold back and used her palm to push An Xiao Li's stubborn head.

The moment Chen Yu Bai stepped out of the small bedroom he saw Xiao Li let Miss Chen vent on Xiao Li without protest. Even though Miss Chen was his aunt, he was still angry seeing someone hurt Xiao Li.

But when An Xiao Li spotted Chen Yu Bai, she hugged her rabbit and quickly disappeared from her family home. An Xiao Li and her rabbit flew downstairs and knocked on the front door of Qin Sang's family home to seek refuge.

Inside An Xiao Li's family home, Chen Yu Bai calmly stopped the angry Miss Chen from ordering Xiao Li to come back. 'Chen Yin Ren, aunt you're getting fiercer by the day.'

'You don't know what she's like. If she's not hit then her skin will be itchy. I'm angry to death, she's clumsy and fickle...' Miss Chen said.

'Didn't you say she's an angel?' Chen Yu Bai asked.

Chen Yu Bai remembered that year Miss Chen brought her husband's daughter to Chen Yu Bai's family home, Miss Chen looked the happiest he'd seen her that year.

At that time Miss Chen was adamant about marrying a poor widower with a little daughter. The Chen household battled with Miss Chen to the point of trembling heaven and earth. The Chen household's strong pressure of disapproval didn't waver Miss Chen's decision. Miss Chen packed her belongings and at night left with the poor widower and the little girl. Before Miss Chen left she vowed that she'd cut all ties with the Chen household.

When the 'little strange creature' visited Chen Yu Bai's home, he didn't want to be separated from Miss Chen. At night before Miss Chen left, Miss Chen talked to him the whole night. Miss Chen talked about her life dream, her life happiness, the man she loved and... An Xiao Li.

'Xiao Li is different to you... that's not right, Xiao Li is different to other kids. She's a little angel, she doesn't understand anything but yet she understands everything,' Miss Chen said.

At that time Miss Chen was young and clinked a glass of wine with Chen Yu Bai's glass of wine. Miss Chen tilted her head back and gulped down the wine.

Chen Yu Bai was annoyed whilst listening to Miss Chen's romanticised depiction of Miss Chen's new family, he quietly drank his glass of wine.

'She's a really happy kid, An Bu San taught her well. She's polite and understands the situation. She's like pure sunshine above the clouds in the sky. But I can see in her eyes that she worries about living a hard life. Her worries are really... naive, she knows clearly this world doesn't exist without windy storms. But she can make her sky clear blue without a single cloud. Yu Bai, she and her dad makes me feel that everything is a lot simpler than I thought it can ever be. Just being with them, no matter how hard life is, I'll always be happy. So I need to leave, do you understand?' Miss Chen said.

The teen Chen Yu Bai didn't understand. At that time he started testing out his skills in the share market world. Everything at that time was simple, everything fell into two categories – 1, were things that he needed and 2, were things that he didn't need.

The teen Chen Yu Bai didn't hold back Miss Chen who he had the best relationship with in the Chen household. But the teen Chen Yu Bai was vindictive, he remembered very clearly the little girl named 'An Xiao Li.'

Angel? The teen Chen Yu Bai was truly curious what an angel looked like.

The teen Chen Yu Bai used his cold eyes to hide his feelings of attachment, and the adult Chen Yu Bai felt he was still the teen Chen Yu Bai. The adult Chen Yu Bai stared at the cluttered shoes at the door and smiled. Xiao Li wasn't an angel, she was more of a dummy.

Miss Chen was abundant in many years of life experiences. She easily recognised the suspicious change in Chen Yu Bai – she'd never seen her nephew smiled warmly. She sighed on the inside and patted his shoulder. 'I'm only going to say this much. I've raised her for many years, she's like my own daughter. I'm not going to let her be heartbroken and hurt.'

Chen Yu Bai understood Miss Chen knew about him and Xiao Li but he didn't admit it to Miss Chen, he only responded 'oh' to acknowledge that he heard Miss Chen's warning.

An Bu San happily stepped out of the study room with a chess board and a cup of tea in his hands. 'Miss Chen, call downstairs and summon the little boy to play chess with me.'

Chen Yu Bai was extremely modest with Xiao Li's dad. 'Uncle, I just learnt how to play chess. Can uncle teach me a few chess strategies?'

An Bu San loved juniors who were humble and respectable the most and excitedly nodded his head. Miss Chen fumed, she looked at her oblivious and gullible husband who didn't understand the situation and it made her more frustrated. Miss Chen packed away the chess board and made An Bu San and Chen Yu Bai exchanged a Miss-Chen-is-too-fierce look with each other. 'Ate enough yet? Both of you go to sleep!'

Downstairs the little boy that played chess with An Bu San had an urgent matter to attend to and left Qin Sang's family home. An Xiao Li crawled into Qin Sang's bed. Qin Sang went to her mum's room to get an extra bed sheet and

pillow and informed her mum that Li Wei Ran left already. Ye Dao listened calmly to Qin Sang and didn't ask any questions.

In Qin Sang's room, neither Qin Sang nor An Xiao Li could sleep. They both laid quietly on the bed so the ring tone of An Xiao Li's phone intruded their quiet reflections.

An Xiao Li saw the caller ID was 'little Bai' and the photo under the caller ID was of Chen Yu Bai sleeping. Even though in the photo he was sleeping deeply, she never knew why his lips were smiling.

That photo appearing in the middle of the night was like a sharp thorn pierced into An Xiao Li's heart. She pressed the reject call button.

Then An Xiao Li thought about Chen Yu Bai's temperament and she was certain he would call her again so she texted him. 'What is it? I'm sleeping.'

'I have something to say to you. Come outside,' Chen Yu Bai texted.

'No, I'm cold,' An Xiao Li texted.

Whilst An Xiao Li quietly waited for Chen Yu Bai's text, she tidied the clutter in her heart – she got rid of each piece of clutter one by one, each stick and each stone.

It seemed An Xiao Li suddenly realised, what Miss Chen's nephew trampled over was the last shred of happiness she saved for him. A man however good and brilliant, could only be held onto temporarily and in the future it wasn't certain he'd stay. An Xiao Li no longer felt she could believe that love could conquer all.

Chen Yu Bai called An Xiao Li again and she pressed the reject call button again then she waited for a long time for his text.

'An Xiao Li!' Chen Yu Bai texted.

'Yes?' An Xiao Li texted.

'I didn't purposely hide it from you, don't be angry,' Chen Yu Bai texted.

'I'm not angry,' An Xiao Li texted.

'Then tomorrow I'll talk to Miss Chen about us,' Chen Yu Bai texted.

'What about us?' An Xiao Li texted.

‘About us getting engaged soon,’ Chen Yu Bai texted.

An Xiao Li didn’t feel any excitement about Chen Yu Bai’s text reply instead she felt more tired. She texted one last text to him and switched off her phone. ‘No, don’t tell them about us. I’m sleepy, will discuss more tomorrow. Good night.’

Qin Sang heard An Xiao Li’s phone was switched off. ‘Done thinking yet?’

‘Still thinking,’ An Xiao Li said

‘Take your time thinking,’ Qin Sang said.

‘Um,’ An Xiao Li said.

Night was the gentlest calm dish in the world. At three in the morning, An Xiao Li sighed and Qin Sang sighed too.

‘I want to break up with him,’ An Xiao Li said.

‘I want to tell him the truth,’ Qin Sang said.

‘What?’ An Xiao Li and Qin Sang said at the same time.

Qin Sang rolled over and faced An Xiao Li. ‘Xiao Li, are you serious?’

‘Um... I love him, but he’s not compatible with me. It’s not equal between us. Perhaps, he likes me. But it’s most likely in a lifetime he can’t do one thing, which is love me. Even something as important as being Miss Chen’s nephew, he hid it from me. It shows he’s still not certain about us. Sang Sang, I can only live a few decades. Why do I need to accept feeling hurt for that long? I need to find a man who’ll treat me good,’ An Xiao Li said.

Qin Sang quietly listened to An Xiao Li. She stretched out an arm and hugged An Xiao Li’s shoulder. ‘It turns out you understand already.’

‘Sang Sang, I want to break up. Like you said at the start, it’s better for Chu Hao Ran to remember me for the rest of his life. I want little Bai to remember me for the rest of his life too,’ An Xiao Li said.

Qin Sang heard An Xiao Li’s hope and thought it was laughable. Chu Hao Ran wasn’t in the same league as Chen Yu Bai. Breaking up with Chu Hao Ran was easy. But breaking up with Chen Yu Bai... would be a lot harder.

‘Sang Sang, it’s hard to deal with Chen Yu Bai. You have to help me,’ An Xiao Li

said.

‘If you truly don’t love him anymore, it’s not hard to break up with him. The hardest thing about love always lies within a person’s heart. Xiao Li, I’ll support whatever decision you make but you need to think about it carefully,’ Qin Sang said.

An Xiao Li wanted to cry when she thought about no longer having a man named little Bai in her life. But the shock she received from him in the afternoon was too big and she was determined. ‘Um, I thought about it carefully already. I want to break up with him.’

Qin Sang and An Xiao Li couldn’t sleep all night but slept soundly in the morning. Ye Dao saw it was snowing outside and didn’t wake up Qin Sang. Ye Dao went to mark her students’ end of semester exams at school.

Upstairs Chen Yu Bai didn’t know if it was sleeping on an unfamiliar bed or if he didn’t have Xiao Li sleeping next to him, but he couldn’t sleep peacefully all night. When he was half dreaming and half awake, he wanted to hug Xiao Li but she wasn’t sleeping in his arms. Then he remembered that Miss dummy was still angry and slept downstairs.

What was there to be angry about? Chen Yu Bai washed his face and saw the light bluish bruise under his eye bags. He felt frustrated and he regretted spoiling Xiao Li.

Chen Yu Bai called Xiao Li’s phone and it was still switched off. By the time it was nine, he couldn’t wait anymore. He called Qin Sang, but Qin Sang’s phone was switched off too. He saw Miss Chen and An Bu San went to their school to mark end of semester exams and thought that Ye Dao would be at school too. He put on his jacket and went downstairs.

Chen Yu Bai knocked on the front door of Qin Sang’s family home. Qin Sang opened the door. She wore a velvet robe over her night shirt that exposed her long healthy legs. Within a second he thought about the innocent pitta bird on Xiao Li’s night shirt. Then he awkwardly looked away and coughed a few times. ‘Where’s Xiao Li?’

Qin Sang was still in a dreamy state and scratched her head. ‘Sleeping.’

Chen Yu Bai saw Qin Sang's rare dazed face that was usually coldly calm and he spoke gentler. 'Can I inconvenience you to sleep in another room? I want to talk to Xiao Li.'

'No,' Qin Sang said.

Qin Sang rubbed her eyes and turned around to go back to sleep in her room.

Chen Yu Bai waited for a long time but Qin Sang didn't move to another room to sleep. He knew that Qin Sang purposely made it hard for him to talk to Xiao Li.

Chen Yu Bai sat on the sofa and waited in the living room of Qin Sang's family home until the afternoon. Ye Dao opened the front door and the moment she stepped inside she felt a murderous aura. Ye Dao looked at the sofa in the living room and saw Miss Chen's nephew.

'What are you doing sitting on the sofa by yourself? Where's Sang Sang and Xiao Li?' Ye Dao asked.

Chen Yu Bai smiled and spoke politely. 'I came to look for Xiao Li. But Qin Sang isn't awake yet. It's nothing, I'll wait for a while.' He looked at his watch. 'No rush.'

Ye Dao raised her eyebrows and strode to Qin Sang's room. She put her bag down and shook both Qin Sang and Xiao Li awake.

An Xiao Li's hair was messy, she rubbed her eyes and stepped outside Qin Sang's room. Whilst she was yawning she spotted Chen Yu Bai standing in the living room. He stood with his arms crossed and he was staring at her.

An Xiao Li remembered what happened yesterday and within a second she felt he was hateable. 'What are you doing here?'

Chen Yu Bai sighed. He stepped toward Xiao Li, fixed her messy hair and pinched her cheek. 'I came to say I'm sorry. I'm sorry, don't be angry anymore, ok?'

An Xiao Li was quiet, because it was rare that Chen Yu Bai put aside his pride and apologised. In that moment Qin Sang in her night shirt 'flew' passed Chen Yu Bai and An Xiao Li into the bathroom to wash her face.

An Xiao Li composed herself. 'Go upstairs first. Later I'll come upstairs and we

can talk.'

Chen Yu Bai hesitated whether to go upstairs and wait. But whilst he was indecisive, Qin Sang in her night shirt flew from the bathroom and straight to her room. He knew clearly it was Qin Sang's influence that made Xiao Li determined and his face felt colder.

Chen Yu Bai admitted to himself that he lowered his head to his lowest tolerated threshold, he coldly strode outside.

Half an hour later, An Xiao Li went upstairs. Chen Yu Bai sat on the sofa and unhappily waited in the living room. She didn't panic as she did in the past when she saw that he was angry. She calmly went to her room, changed her clothes, brushed her hair and went to the kitchen to pour herself a glass of milk.

'What do you want to say to me?' An Xiao Li asked calmly.

Chen Yu Bai was never patient as he was in Xiao Li's family home. But he was wrong first. He took a deep breath and spoke calmly. 'I'm sorry. I shouldn't have hid my relationship with Miss Chen from you.'

'I accept your apology. Is there anything else?' An Xiao Li said.

Chen Yu Bai wrinkled his forehead. 'Don't you want to know... when I recognised you?'

'If you don't want to tell me, even if I asked it'll be pointless. That aspect about you I know too well,' An Xiao Li said.

An Xiao Li used the excuse of drinking milk to bend her head and avoid looking at Chen Yu Bai's eyes.

Chen Yu Bai laughed coldly. 'What else did Qin Sang teach you?'

'Is my IQ that low that I need to rely on someone else to understand those kind of things?' An Xiao Li asked.

Chen Yu Bai was choked for words.

'You've never promised me anything so I thought I don't need to formally say I want to break up with you. But, Chen Yu Bai, I'm formally telling you – from this moment, the only connection that we have is that we're cousins through marriage. My parents don't know about our past so there's no need to tell them.'

It's up to you if you want to stay here and celebrate New Year, because we're still cousins and hosting you for a few days isn't an issue,' An Xiao Li recited what she memorised last night.

Chen Yu Bai laughed coldly and his stomach ached. 'An Xiao Li, I'm not a person without principles, you shouldn't take it too far.'

'I'm a person with principles too, you shouldn't take it too far either,' An Xiao Li said coldly.

An Xiao Li's back was actually sweating, because Chen Yu Bai's expression was too scary.

The wind banged against the windows, there was no heater inside the living room and both Chen Yu Bai and An Xiao Li were cold and quiet. Finally, he realised that Miss dummy was truly angry, the determined look in her eyes froze his heart.

It was the first time in Chen Yu Bai's life that he felt scared. But he knew he'd never meet a second person with the same look in Xiao Li's eyes that made him felt compassionate and scared to that extent.

'What is it that you want...' Chen Yu Bai surrendered.

Chen Yu Bai was tired and asked An Xiao Li, whatever she wanted he was willing to let her have her way.

'Chen Yu Bai, I don't need you anymore,' An Xiao Li said. She gripped her hands and forced herself to continue. 'I want to be far away from you. I want to find someone who is compatible with me more than you. That someone doesn't need to be as handsome as you or rich as you. I just need that someone to treat me better than you treat me and who can bring more happiness into my life than you can.'

Chen Yu Bai admitted that his heart was always covered in ice. But in that moment Xiao Li's words made his icy heart melt into the coldest water, it was so cold that there was no warm steam at all.

'Very good, very smooth,' Chen Yu Bai said. He clapped his hands. 'An Xiao Li, you're too good. Go ahead and find your happiness, I won't stop you.'

End of Chapter Eighteen (Part 2 of 2)

Related

part 1

Chapter Nineteen (Part 1)

On New Year's Eve there was a small snowstorm. At the An household, Miss Chen cooked a hot pot dinner for New Year's Eve.

An Xiao Li loved New Year's Eve dinner the most. The whole night she got to hear Miss Chen lovingly spar with both her dad and herself. Occasionally An Bu San got to interject a few questions, but at any time before he got to finish 'the so-called' conversation starter of his, Miss Chen would intimidate him to keep his trap shut.

Since yesterday afternoon, Chen Yu Bai didn't say a lot and his complexion was colder than the snowstorm outside. Both An Bu San and Miss Chen noticed Chen Yu Bai was quieter than usual, but they weren't nosey people so they didn't ask about it.

Miss Chen took out two New Year red packets for her daughter and her nephew. 'It's time to wish us a Happy New Year!'

Chen Yu Bai and An Xiao Li received their red packets. An Xiao Li glanced at Chen Yu Bai's bigger red packet and wasn't happy. 'Why is his red packet bigger than mine?'

Chen Yu Bai ignored An Xiao Li and he calmly put his red packet on the table. 'Thank you Miss Chen, thank you uncle. Happy New Year.'

Miss Chen knocked An Xiao Li's head. 'I've raised you myself, but why are you so bad? Like a little dummy girl. You'll be turning twenty-three years old, how can I marry you off in your bad state?'

'I'm still young!' An Xiao Li mumbled. She was still unhappy about Chen Yu Bai's bigger red packet.

'Twenty-three is still young? I'm letting you know, aunty Zheng is setting you up with her nephew who's a senior manager of a real estate company. After New Year, you'll go on an arranged date with him so you better be on your best behaviour and don't embarrass your mum! If he rejects you, wait and see how I

deal with you!’

Miss Chen warned her daughter and at the same time glanced at her nephew to see what his reaction was. Chen Yu Bai calmly ate his dinner and pretended like he didn’t hear their conversation.

‘I don’t want to have an arranged date...’ An Xiao Li protested.

‘Don’t worry, it’s not certain he’ll reject you,’ Miss Chen said.

An Bu San felt his wife’s unnecessary interference in their daughter’s life was laughable. An Bu San patted their daughter’s shoulder sympathetically, he knew what it was like to be bullied by his wife into doing something against his will. Even Chen Yu Bai smiled at Miss Chen’s antics.

It was obvious the atmosphere in the house was warm, but An Xiao Li didn’t know what pricked her heart because tears fell down her cheeks. In that moment An Xiao Li snapped out of her daze and realised she was heartbroken.

An Bu San and Miss Chen both didn’t understand why their daughter was crying and thought their daughter was sulking. Chen Yu Bai was quiet for a long time then he passed his red packet to Xiao Li. ‘Don’t cry anymore.’

An Xiao Li heard Chen Yu Bai’s tone sounded like an older cousin teasing their younger cousin. She gripped the red packet and her heart was more depressed.

‘Yu Bai, you’ll be turning twenty-nine years old. Is your Chen Yin Jiang arranging your marriage yet?’ Miss Chen asked her nephew to deflect the attention off her daughter.

‘I’m responsible for making my own life decisions,’ Chen Yu Bai said.

‘Oh? You actually have a girlfriend already? Who is she? How’s her personality? When are you two getting married?’ Miss Chen asked.

‘Was planning to get married next year, but...’ Chen Yu Bai said and paused to glance at Xiao Li who was bending her head and wiping her nose. ‘She’s mad at me at the moment. Next time I’ll introduce her to you. She’s a little dummy, her personality... recently I realised she’s a little unreasonable.’

An Xiao Li threw the tissue she used to wipe her nose onto the dining table and glared at Chen Yu Bai. ‘Who’s the one that’s unreasonable?’

‘Xiao Li! Don’t you know how to be polite?’ An Bu San scolded.

Chen Yu Bai quietly smiled. An Xiao Li glared at Chen Yu Bai and turned away and met Miss Chen’s accusatory look and it made An Xiao Li more upset that her eyes stung.

After dinner, the town’s event organisers invited everyone in the town from teachers to students to go to the school’s field to watch fireworks. The An household all went to see the fireworks. It was a big crowd and a lot of kids were running and playing around. There was a chubby little boy who knocked over a dazed An Xiao Li, the chubby little boy made a face at An Xiao Li and ran away laughing.

Chen Yu Bai followed behind the An household but rushed to Xiao Li when he saw her fell onto the snowy ground. He helped her stand up. She pushed him away, brushed snow off her body and avoided eye contact with him. ‘Thank you.’

‘Don’t be polite,’ Chen Yu Bai said in a colder tone than An Xiao Li’s cold tone of voice.

Chen Yu Bai and An Xiao Li both stood frozen on the spot and later the fireworks exploded in the sky. It was the part of the night that An Xiao Li anticipated the most on New Year’s Day. But in that moment she stood shoulder to shoulder with Chen Yu Bai, she momentarily felt regret, if he was still her little Bai it’d have been something to rejoice, watching the beautiful sky of fireworks with the man of her dreams.

‘Yesterday I was too hot headed, I’m sorry,’ Chen Yu Bai said too fast.

‘Huh?’ An Xiao Li asked.

‘It’s nothing,’ Chen Yu Bai said.

Chen Yu Bai wore a black jacket and he tilted his head up like he was watching the fireworks, but his eyes were distant and cold.

In the midst of the loud applause and cheers, the radio through the school’s speaker system played Happy New Year songs.

‘Do you celebrate New Year like this every year?’ Chen Yu Bai asked.

‘What other way is there to celebrate New Year? How do you celebrate New

Year?’ An Xiao Li asked reluctantly.

‘Work,’ Chen Yu Bai said.

‘You work on New Year’s Day?’ An Xiao Li asked.

‘For me it’s just time, there’s no difference,’ Chen Yu Bai said.

‘Cold-blooded,’ An Xiao Li said.

‘Um,’ Chen Yu Bai said calmly. ‘In the past I used to think I didn’t need any warmth.’

‘When I was a kid, my family hosted fireworks at home that was even more beautiful than the fireworks here, but I didn’t bother watching the fireworks. When Chen Yin Ren was still living in our family home, we celebrated New Year’s Eve and New Year’s Day together, back then she didn’t know how to cook yet so she made instant noodles for me. That was how I used to celebrate New Year’s Eve dinner with Chen Yin Ren, because we didn’t like spending it with all our relatives and a bunch of outsiders invited to our home for dinner,’ Chen Yu Bai said.

An Xiao Li noticed when Chen Yu Bai spoke slower, his breath was colder and it seemed to give off a sense of loneliness that contrasted to the lively atmosphere around them. His face was cold as usual, but she felt that he was opening his protective layer that he kept closed for most of his life and it revealed his vulnerable heart.

An Xiao Li felt that most things had hard shells on the outside, because on the inside were vulnerabilities like fear of being hurt.

‘The first time I met you, I felt that Chen Yin Ren was actually a dummy. You won’t an angel like how she described. You were a country bumpkin, timid and I didn’t get to scare you but you were already crying and your nose was runny. You were troublesome,’ Chen Yu Bai said.

Chen Yu Bai only spoke that much about his past to An Xiao Li that night. Suddenly he turned away from her and smiled to himself. Under the bright fireworks, she felt that his handsomeness choked her breathless.

An Xiao Li didn’t remember what she was like when she met Chen Yu Bai. That

far away afternoon, Miss Chen just got secretly married to her dad and Miss Chen brought her and her dad home to meet Miss Chen’s family. Miss Chen’s family had guards stopped An Bu San from coming inside Miss Chen’s family home. Miss Chen brought An Xiao Li inside her family home and upstairs into Chen Yu Bai’s room. Then Miss Chen went downstairs and had a screaming match with her parents. After that day, Miss Chen’s heart was coldly set and she never mentioned anything about the Chen household in front of An Bu San or An Xiao Li.

‘An Xiao Li, if back then I could predict my future, I wouldn’t bully you. If I could predict what happened now, I wouldn’t... have done so many things that caused you to hate me,’ Chen Yu Bai said.

Chen Yu Bai’s voice gradually faded. An Xiao Li’s eyes released a flood of tears and he slowly wiped her tears. He gently held her face and looked into her eyes. ‘I’m really sorry, I made you this sad. I’m sorry.’

The fireworks bloomed and half the sky was dyed in bright colours. The loud applause and cheers on the school’s field were continuous. In the midst of the lively joy, everyone tilted their heads up and looked up at the sky. Except for An Xiao Li who covered her mouth and cried silently and Chen Yu Bai who bent his head and quietly bypassed the crowd of people and left An Xiao Li behind.

End of Chapter Nineteen (Part 1)

Related

part 2

Chapter Nineteen (Part 2)

On New Year's Day.

An Xiao Li gloomily talked to her dad whilst waiting a long time for Miss Chen to cook breakfast. Finally Miss Chen came out of the kitchen and called them to sit down at the dining table for breakfast. 'Eat radish. I hope this New Year is full of radishes!'

Miss Chen picked up a large radish for her husband and her daughter and put it into their bowls.

An Xiao Li stared at her large radish for a long time. Then she pretended she just remembered something. 'Where's Chen Yu Bai?'

Miss Chen picked up a large radish for herself. 'Left already.'

'Left already?' An Xiao Li asked and the chopsticks in her hand clanked on the dining table. 'Where did he go?'

'He said he needed to go to console his girlfriend,' Miss Chen said and laughed cheekily. 'He left early in the morning.'

An Xiao Li choked on her radish, she couldn't swallow or throw up the radish but her tears overflowed. She lost her appetite, stood and escaped to her room to call Qin Sang.

An Xiao Li pushed open her bedroom door and everything smelt like the familiar cool mint scent. She was frustrated and opened the window to let the icy wind get rid of it. Then she pushed the bed sheet and pillows off the bed onto the floor. She sat on an empty bed and called Qin Sang.

Qin Sang was back at her own house and when An Xiao Li called Qin Sang, Qin Sang was having a bubble bath.

'You're regretting already?' Qin Sang asked. She waited for a while but didn't hear An Xiao Li respond. 'Then are you coming home?'

'No,' An Xiao Li said. She looked at the yellowed walls. 'The emperor's

defeated. If I go back home now then I don't know what I'll dream about.'

'An Xiao Li, you're really... indescribable,' Qin Sang said. 'Then what do you want? You don't want to be depressed but you don't want to love either. Right now are you feeling compassion for your little Bai? Thinking about him being alone on New Year's Day out on the streets...'

'Qin-Sang! Are you human?' An Xiao Li asked.

'Mmm... right?' Qin Sang said.

'Not right!' An Xiao Li said.

'Oh... then I'll hang up,' Qin Sang said.

'Don't hang up,' An Xiao Li said. 'You haven't told me what's happening with you. Why aren't you with your Wei Ran? Aren't you scared he's eating junk food outside?'

'Of course I'm not scared. I don't need him to eat too full,' Qin Sang said.

An Xiao Li glared at her phone. She didn't need to think and knew that Qin Sang's vast knowledge were put to use on Li Wei Ran's body. What was there for Qin Sang to rub into her face? Her little Bai...

An Xiao Li remembered the nights that made her blush red and her heart pound and the little growls that made her skin crawl. She didn't want to think about those nights, because within a second she felt depressed again. 'Sang Sang, what do you think about him accepting our break up this easily? Perhaps he doesn't like me anymore, right?'

'Do you hope that he clings to you forever and not let you go? Make a dramatic scene for your parents to know?' Qin Sang asked.

'Of course not!' An Xiao Li said.

'Then right now isn't it good?' Qin Sang asked.

'But... why do I feel... so depressed?' An Xiao Li said.

An Xiao Li felt the psyche of the female population's fatal flaw was men – they'd lose all common sense and become wishy washy, hoping their man would still cling to them and love them even after breaking up.

‘Miss Chen wants me to go on an arranged date, do you think I should go?’ An Xiao Li asked.

‘Don’t go. You just broke up with Chen Yu Bai. If you go, you’ll hurt his pride and also it’ll be disrespectful toward the man you’ll be having an arranged date with,’ Qin Sang said.

‘Um, that’s right. But Miss Chen will beat me to death!’ An Xiao Li said.

‘Come back home tomorrow, I need your support,’ Qin Sang said.

‘Huh? Sang Sang, do you want to tell Li Wei Ran the truth about your dad’s family?’ An Xiao Li asked.

‘Um. But before that I need to tell the truth with his dad,’ Qin Sang said.

The following night An Xiao Li arrived at Qin Sang’s house but Qin Sang wasn’t home. Instead An Xiao Li received a call from Chu Hao Ran and he invited her to a banquet. She declined his invitation, but he said that it was an engagement banquet for Qin Sang and her fiancé Zheng Hao. An Xiao Li was shocked and knew that Qin Sang was blindsided. So An Xiao Li agreed to let Chu Hao Ran drive her to see Qin Sang. Inside Qin Sang’s room, An Xiao Li quickly changed into one of Qin Sang’s dresses.

Chu Hao Ran picked up An Xiao Li and drove her straight to the banquet. When they entered the banquet room... she saw Qin Sang distraught like the way Qin Sang was a decade ago.

‘Sang Sang!’ An Xiao Li called many times before Qin Sang lifted her head.

An Xiao Li saw Qin Sang’s long eyelashes blinked, but there was no sign of life or the usual focus in Qin Sang’s eyes.

Qin Sang felt like she was taken back to a decade ago. She was reunited with her dad, but hated by his family. She felt like the whole world abandoned her, she couldn’t go back to her hometown to be with her mum. She felt helpless and the only person she wanted to find was her best friend. ‘Xiao Li.’ She recognised it was really her best friend in front of her.

‘I’m here,’ An Xiao Li said. She couldn’t care less where she was, she hugged

her best friend and softly patted her best friend's back. 'Sang Sang, I'm here.'

Qin Sang couldn't hold back her tears anymore and it flowed out.

Suddenly Qin Sang and An Xiao Li became the focus of everyone's attention and the banquet room was eerily quiet. Zheng Hao and Chu Hao Ran looked at each other. Then Chu Hao Ran pulled An Xiao Li away from Qin Sang and Zheng Hao held onto Qin Sang.

Chu Hao Ran saw Chen Yu Bai stepping toward him and An Xiao Li so Chu Hao Ran wrapped an arm around An Xiao Li's shoulder.

An Xiao Li was about to push Chu Hao Ran's arm off her shoulder, but she felt a familiar cold aura at the back of her neck, it was paralysing, why was it similar to... Chen Yu Bai's cold aura?

An Xiao Li turned around, a sofa separated her and Chen Yu Bai but the cold look in his eyes seemed like he wanted to shoot daggers in her direction.

'You...' An Xiao Li said in a choked voice. 'Won't you supposed to be going for celebratory drinks?'

Chen Yu Bai's whole body gave off a scary icy aura. He slowly and calmly spoke to An Xiao Li. 'Come here.'

An Xiao Li reflexively moved toward Chen Yu Bai but Chu Hao Ran held onto her shoulder tight. Chen Yu Bai laughed coldly, pursed his lips and strode off.

Later that night, An Xiao Li went outside for fresh air. She rubbed her bare shoulders spotted with goose bumps from the cold snow. Her body felt it wasn't worth freezing to get fresh air so she went back inside. On her way back inside she nearly bumped into someone. She quickly steadied her body and stood straight. He took a step closer to her and his body pressed against her. His cool mint scent was exhaled onto her face, she didn't need to tilt her head up and look at his face to know who he was.

'Your dress is too beautiful,' Chen Yu Bai coldly praised.

An Xiao Li laughed sweetly. 'Thank you, cousin.'

Chen Yu Bai lifted his head and gulped down the rest of his glass of wine. He

laughed, bent his head and exhaled into Xiao Li's ear. 'Beautiful to the point I want to personally use my hands to rip it off your body... rip it to pieces!'

An Xiao Li could smell the alcohol stench from Chen Yu Bai's breath and she immediately took a step back. He took a step toward her, and trapped her between the wall behind her and his body. She saw the intense burning desire in his eyes.

Chu Hao Ran kept his eyes on An Xiao Li from a distance and the moment he saw Chen Yu Bai was with An Xiao Li, Chu Hao Ran stepped toward them. Chu Hao Ran pulled Chen Yu Bai away and Chu Hao Ran hugged An Xiao Li protectively. 'CEO Chen, tonight you seem to be fated to run into with my girlfriend.'

After Chen Yu Bai was pulled away from An Xiao Li by Chu Hao Ran, Chen Yu Bai smiled gently. Chu Hao Ran never seen anyone smiled gently like Chen Yu Bai, in a way that intimidated Chu Hao Ran's whole body.

In that second that Chu Hao Ran's body was motionless, Chen Yu Bai stepped toward Chu Hao Ran. One of Chen Yu Bai's hand held Chu Hao Ran's shoulder and the other hand grabbed Chu Hao Ran's arm that was recently in a cast and slammed it into the wall. The unexpected attack on Chu Hao Ran's arm was painful to the point he couldn't cry out. Chu Hao Ran's legs were limp and staggered forward, Chen Yu Bai's knee didn't hesitate and struck into Chu Hao Ran's stomach.

Chen Yu Bai's swift attacks on Chu Hao Ran in total didn't take longer than five seconds to complete. An Xiao Li was shocked and her mouth gaped opened. Chu Hao Ran leaned his back against the wall and slid onto the snowy ground. Chu Hao Ran hunched his body, relaxed his arm that was injured, and used his good arm to press it against his stomach.

Guards immediately ran toward Chen Yu Bai. Chen Yu Bai easily dodged many guards and leisurely rolled up his shirt sleeves. Chen Yu Bai grabbed a wine bottle, anyone that came toward him, he'd kick them back and if two people came forward he'd kick at a faster speed. Chen Yu Bai's kicks and punches increasingly became stronger and the battle quickly became chaotic.

An Xiao Li's first thought was – what a romantic scene! Finally there was a man

that fought because of her, and it was a strong and handsome man too. The second thought was – little Bai’s stomach!

An Xiao Li couldn’t break apart the fight because there were too many men fighting all at once. She could only stand on the sidelines and watch Chen Yu Bai defend himself on his own against so many men and slowly his energy depleted. In that critical moment, she glanced at Chu Hao Ran and saw someone carried him away from the fight. She carelessly went to Chu Hao Ran’s side and she cried loudly. ‘Chu Hao Ran! Why aren’t you breathing? Don’t die!’

End of Chapter Nineteen (Part 2)

Related

part 3

Chapter Nineteen (Part 3 of 3)

After the fight ended, Zheng Hao took Chu Hao Ran to the hospital and everyone else went back inside, including Chen Yu Bai who started the fight.

An Xiao Li slowly followed the guests inside. She was angry at herself for being fooled again by Chu Hao Ran, he only pretended to stop breathing before! She realised Chu Hao Ran was one of the people involved who set out to hurt Qin Sang.

Inside An Xiao Li stood at a distance from Chen Yu Bai, but her eyes never left him. She'd never seen him looked so complex – weird, furious, heartbroken and finally he hid it all under a cold mask before he looked away from her.

Chen Yu Bai turned away from Xiao Li and looked at Rong Yan who was stepping toward him.

Rong Yan wasn't impressed with his third brother's public display of testosterone and greeted his third brother with a hard punch on his third brother's arm. 'Bastard, couldn't you wait until you left the banquet before you attacked?'

Chen Yu Bai shook his swollen red hand. 'Couldn't wait.'

Rong Yan glanced at An Xiao Li who stood at a distance to them and was about to say something to his third brother, but his fifth brother came inside and his third brother used it as an excuse to leave.

An Xiao Li decided to step toward Chen Yu Bai before he left. She tugged on his shirt sleeve. 'Are you ok?'

'Not dead yet,' Chen Yu Bai said stiffly.

Chen Yu Bai left An Xiao Li behind again since they watched fireworks together on New Year's Day in her hometown.

Li Wei Ran drove Chen Yu Bai and Rong Yan to the Liang household. Li Wei Ran

looked at Chen Yu Bai through the front mirror. Chen Yu Bai sat on the backseat with his eyes closed. 'Do you need to go to the hospital first?'

Li Wei Ran saw that Chen Yu Bai's shirt sleeve was stained with blood and Chen Yu Bai sat stiffly. Li Wei Ran was certain that the injury on Chen Yu Bai's back wasn't light.

Rong Yan was frustrated and knocked on the window to get Chen Yu Bai's attention. 'Third uncle, how are you?'

'Can't be killed,' Chen Yu Bai said coldly.

Chen Yu Bai opened his eyes and felt really tired. He leaned forward and rested his head against the back of Rong Yan's seat. 'Call Qin Yang.'

'You want me to thank him for being such a good host to us?' Rong Yan teased.

'Ask him... if everyone has left yet,' Chen Yu Bai said.

'Um,' Rong Yan said.

Chen Yu Bai didn't say anything else.

Li Wei Ran sighed. 'An Xiao Li wouldn't have left yet. Chu Hao Ran was the one who drove her to the banquet.'

Rong Yan sighed. He took out his phone and called Qin Yang but couldn't get through so he called Qin Yang's sister, Qin Liu. 'Third uncle, it seems you've fallen.'

When the three sworn brothers arrived at the Liang household, they saw Liang Fei Fang and Gu Yan lighting firecrackers outside. Gu Yan noticed Chen Yu Bai first and was extremely shocked that Chen Yu Bai was injured. 'Who's so daring? How can they not be scared of Chen Yu Bai?'

No one responded to Gu Yan's questions and she sulked all the way into the living room. Liang Fei Fang soothed Gu Yan with a few words before she pouted her lips and went upstairs.

Liang Fei Fang asked a servant to serve his sworn brothers hot tea and dinner then bandage Chen Yu Bai.

Rong Yan recounted the disastrous night to Liang Fei Fang. Afterward Liang Fei Fang looked at his clock and saw that it was late. 'Whoever is staying, find your own room. I'm going upstairs.'

After a servant bandaged Chen Yu Bai, he let Rong Yan and Li Wei Ran talk amongst themselves. Chen Yu Bai stood and quietly went upstairs to try to have a peaceful sleep that evaded him the last couple of nights.

Qin Yang asked An Xiao Li to sleepover night with Qin Sang at their family home, but An Xiao Li refused.

'Give Sang Sang space. Right now she has no sense of security, she doesn't trust anyone,' An Xiao Li reasoned.

Qin Yang still wanted An Xiao Li to stay overnight with his sister, but he respected An Xiao Li's decision and personally drove her home.

On the way to Qin Sang's house, Qin Yang talked to An Xiao Li about Chu Hao Ran. 'Earlier the hospital called and said Chu Hao Ran isn't in a serious condition, except the same arm that was broken before is broken again and he'll need to keep it in a cast again.'

'You don't need to tell me about Chu Hao Ran's condition. I have no connection with that kind of person like Chu Hao Ran,' An Xiao Li said coldly.

Qin Yang laughed. 'Xiao Li, you're too naive. There's a few things that you only see what's on the outside.'

An Xiao Li didn't want to argue with Qin Yang. She knew clearly what kind of person Chu Hao Ran was and what kind of people Qin Sang's half-siblings were too. She was happy that it didn't take long to get to Qin Sang's house.

'Thank you, good night,' An Xiao Li greeted farewell coldly.

'Are you and Qin Sang renting this house together?' Qin Yang stalled.

Qin Yang had been to Qin Sang's house many times.

'No, this is Sang Sang's house. I'm staying here temporarily,' An Xiao Li said.

An Xiao Li didn't hesitate to open the car door to get far away from Qin Yang.

She jumped out of the car and quickly went into Qin Sang’s house without looking back.

End of Chapter Nineteen (Part 3 of 3)

Related

part 1

Chapter Twenty (Part 1)

On the first work day of the New Year, An Xiao Li reluctantly got dressed for work. The moment she left her bedroom, her phone rang. 'Hello?'

Since Chu Hao Ran was in the hospital for a second time, An Xiao Li didn't visit him or call him to ask how he was. 'Xiao Li...'

'Oh. Chu Hao Ran, are you well?' An Xiao Li said politely.

'You're angry at me, right?' Chu Hao Ran asked.

'You and the others schemed to bully my best friend. What do you think, am I angry?' An Xiao Li said.

'Xiao Li, Qin Sang is a complicated person and is connected with my family and my friends' families,' Chu Hao Ran said.

'Shut up!' An Xiao Li yelled.

An Xiao Li couldn't hold back. She looked down on men who did bad things and justified it using weak excuses the most. As if Chu Hao Ran was forced to do anything! He did it for his own self-interest. There was nothing to explain, the winner got to be the emperor and the loser got to be a rebel. He should look at Chen Yu Bai who did a lot of bad things but never made excuses for himself!

'Chu Hao Ran, I'm letting you know even if you didn't scheme against Qin Sang, I still wouldn't like you. You said you'll give me time to see clearly what type of person Chen Yu Bai is. I've seen clearly, Chen Yu Bai is more handsome than you, better than you, he's more responsible than you and he's more deserving to be called a man more than you. You, Qin Yang and Zheng Hao are a bunch of bastards that are cowards who bullies females! Dishonourable, repulsive and thick skinned! I don't want to see you in this lifetime anymore!' An Xiao Li said.

An Xiao Li hung up the phone and drank two large glasses of water to get rid of her frustrations. She walked around the house until she needed to go to the toilet. After she calmed down, she picked up her bag and left for work.

An Xiao Li arrived at work and it was the first official day that Li Wei Ran was her new CEO. She didn't know if she should resign since she broke up with Chen Yu Bai and didn't need to be his private secretary and she had no desire to be Li Wei Ran's secretary either.

An Xiao Li went into Li Wei Ran's office to tell him about her resigning. He wore an immaculate suit and didn't look like someone who was heartbroken.

'Isn't your field of study IT? Why don't you go to the Design and Programming Department? Just because you're starting a new life, it doesn't mean you need to stop working here,' Li Wei Ran said.

'Is your offer legitimate? I don't want to owe anyone anything,' An Xiao Li said.

'Don't worry, if you're lousy at your new job, I'll fire you myself,' Li Wei Ran said.

Later Qin Song visited the IT company and An Xiao Li reminded him of the favour she asked him a couple of days ago that would exile him again.

An Xiao Li's belongings were still kept at Chen Yu Bai's house. But she didn't dare face him again after the harsh cold threat he issued her at the banquet so she asked Qin Song to find out for her when Chen Yu Bai wasn't at home to drive her there to get her belongings. 'You said you'll drive me to get my belongings.'

'It's only a few outfits. I'll pay for you to replace them with new outfits,' Qin Song suggested to save his neck from Chen Yu Bai strangling him to death.

'No!' An Xiao Li said. She grabbed Qin Song's neck and shook his neck. 'My favourite things are all at his house, I need to go get them!'

'Ok... let go of my neck! My neck skin is about to sag. An Xiao Li, I'm letting you know since I met you, everyone has been telling me I'm fat. But I'm not fat, it's because you pinch, pull and strangle my skin that made me look fat,' Qin Song said to save his neck from sagging whilst he was still young.

After work Qin Song reluctantly drove An Xiao Li to Chen Yu Bai's house to get her belongings.

Inside Chen Yu Bai's house, Qin Song held onto his neck and panicked whilst An

Xiao Li packed her belongings in her old room. 'Hurry up!'

An Xiao Li couldn't find her alarm clock anywhere. 'I know, I know!'

'If third brother finds out I drove you here, you won't see me again for at least another decade!' Qin Song said.

Qin Song shook his head and sighed. Suddenly Seven Up ran into An Xiao Li's old room and jumped on An Xiao Li. Seven Up crazily licked An Xiao Li's face. She laughed and avoided her face being licked at the same time.

Chen Yu Bai scolded Seven Up and Seven Up obediently let go of An Xiao Li. Qin Song also feared Seven Up's master and hid behind An Xiao Li.

Chen Yu Bai wore loose pyjamas and the sleeves of his pyjama top were rolled up and revealed the bruises on his arms, which scared An Xiao Li.

An Xiao Li pretended to brush dust off her clothes. 'I... came here to collect my things.'

Chen Yu Bai coldly looked at An Xiao Li and Qin Song retreated further back.

'Have you seen my alarm clock? It looks like an apple. I always put it on the bedhead... but I can't find it,' An Xiao Li said.

An Xiao Li regretted asking about her alarm clock, because Chen Yu Bai's expression became fiercer. But she looked closer at his eyes and it seemed like he was tired and his chin was unshaven. Even though she knew he was always alert and ready to attack if necessary, but his angry and tired state was scarier, it made her panic and a sour and bitter feeling bubbled in her heart.

Chen Yu Bai stared at An Xiao Li for a while, suddenly he grabbed her shoulder and dragged her out of her old room. Qin Song still owned a conscience and rushed to stand in front of Chen Yu Bai to stop him from killing An Xiao Li.

'About... third brother,' Qin Song stuttered. He didn't want to be an indirect accomplice to a murder, because he was the one that drove An Xiao Li to Chen Yu Bai's house. 'Don't be angry, she doesn't... understand the situation.'

An Xiao Li remembered straight after the fight ended at the banquet, Chen Yu Bai was incredibly angry and warned her that if she appeared in front of him ever again, he'd make sure she was better off dead than alive. That was why she

begged Qin Song to drive her to Chen Yu Bai's house when Chen Yu Bai wasn't home to get all her belongings.

'You're scared of me?' Chen Yu Bai asked coldly.

An Xiao Li didn't hesitate and nodded her head. But Chen Yu Bai laughed coldly before she nodded her head, he let her go and pushed her toward Qin Song.

'Ten minutes, pack all your things and leave. This is the last time I'm warning you, don't appear in front of me again, I'm not bluffing,' Chen Yu Bai said and strode back to his room.

Qin Song patted his chest and exhaled. Then he remembered what Rong Yan asked him to do and followed Chen Yu Bai. 'Second brother said that he ordered some people to keep an eye on what's happening in the western district and they reported to second brother that there hasn't been anything out of the ordinary that happened in the western district. So second brother asked me to ask you when you're coming back to work-'

'Scram!' Chen Yu Bai boomed.

Qin Song panicked and moved back a few steps away from Chen Yu Bai.

Chen Yu Bai slammed his bedroom door shut and Qin Song took another step back and bumped into An Xiao Li. It was a gentle bump but An Xiao Li's eyes were teary.

'What's there to cry about?' Qin Song said. 'Hurry up and pack, past ten minutes who knows how he'll explode and at that time I won't dare to stop him from killing you.'

An Xiao Li was scared to death and didn't need to find her alarm clock anymore. Qin Song carried the bigger suitcase and she carried the smaller suitcase and they both ran outside like they were escaping a death sentence.

End of Chapter Twenty (Part 1)

Related

part 2

Chapter Twenty (Part 2 of 2)

The moment An Xiao Li got into Qin Song's car, she cried loudly.

Qin Song helplessly drove with one hand on the steering wheel and the other hand passed tissues to An Xiao Li. 'If you're this heartbroken then why did you agree to break up with him? All you need to do is go back and say a few words, little Bai won't make it hard on you.'

'I dumped him,' An Xiao Li said. She couldn't stop crying and her nose was red and runny. 'It should be him grovelling to me to make up!'

Qin Song stepped on the brakes suddenly and the car parked at a crooked angle. He looked at An Xiao Li in disbelief. 'An Xiao Li, are you sick of living? He's Chen Yu Bai. You're really a... rarity.'

An Xiao Li glared at Qin Song and didn't blame Qin Sang for not thinking highly of Qin Song, his maturity wasn't even on the same level as An Xiao Li.

Qin Song's car was parked crookedly in front of An Xiao Li's new apartment that she rented. He carried her suitcases upstairs to her home and explained his thoughts about his third brother. 'This is the first time I've seen Chen Yu Bai depressed about someone to this extent. Right now, he doesn't even want to go to work. In the past I've never seen him take leave for New Year celebrations. But before and after this New Year's Day he requested many leave days. It's all because of you. Even my first brother said that our third brother has changed. He genuinely loves you. All this time I've known him, apart from life threatening situations, I've never seen him personally use his fists to deal with someone who offended him. Think about what a lethal planner he is. Is there ever a time he lost his control like this? Who is Chu Hao Ran? If my third brother wanted to deal with someone like Chu Hao Ran, my third brother only needs to lift a finger and Chu Hao Ran is doomed. So my third brother doesn't need to make a spectacle of himself and fight in public. Not only did he fight but he was injured too. You... think about it carefully. Living by yourself you need to be careful. If anything happens, call me straight away and I'll always come straight away too.'

An Xiao Li's eyes were teary and she pinched Qin Song's arm hard. 'Mr Wild, in the future your big sister Xiao Li will treat you good.'

Qin Song rubbed his sore arm. 'Ok, now that Sang Sang broke up with fifth brother, you have to help me pursue Sang Sang.'

An Xiao Li with eyes full of tears and a runny nose, nodded her head as a promise.

Since there was no Chen Yu Bai in An Xiao Li's life, she was like any other girl who graduated and started working, it was a peaceful life.

It was only during the middle of the night that An Xiao Li felt lost. She kicked her bed sheet off the bed whilst she slept and woke up freezing cold in the middle of the night, she rolled her body over to hug little Bai next to her, but he wasn't there. Then she remembered he didn't need to put up with her bad sleeping habits, he didn't need to cover her with the bed sheet she kicked off the bed and he didn't need to hug her... she lost that sense of warmth.

When An Xiao Li went to the supermarket she also felt lost the same way she felt lost during the middle of the night. At the supermarket she picked a lot of ingredients to put into her trolley then she remembered she only had to cook for herself and didn't need everything in the trolley.

'Hey!' Qin Song called. He hit An Xiao Li's shoulder. 'Are you coming on the road trip or not?'

An Xiao Li snapped out of her daze and realised Qin Song came to see her after work. She rubbed her nose that stung and took a deep breath. 'Is Chen Yu Bai coming too?'

'He's not coming. Right now he changed his crazy style, he thinks of himself as robot, he buries himself into work and takes on others workload too,' Qin Song said.

Qin Song opened the passenger car door at the back and shoved An Xiao Li inside.

Ji Nan was waiting anxiously in the car for a long time. The moment the car

door opened she mistook An Xiao Li for Qin Song and accidentally kicked An Xiao Li. 'You're slow to death!'

There was no way for An Xiao Li to dodge a kick from a handsome martial arts champion so she could only weakly use her arm to ease the force of the kick. Ji Nan's kick struck An Xiao Li's elbow.

'I'm sorry! I'm sorry!' Ji Nan apologised. She rubbed An Xiao Li's elbow. 'Lucky, it isn't broken! It'll be swollen tomorrow. Tonight I'll rub alcohol on it for you.'

Qin Song sat at the front in the driver's seat and ignited the car engine. He sighed and shook his head – Ji Nan was doomed.

Ji Nan knew she was going to be in trouble with her third brother and didn't stop trying to comfort An Xiao Li, like draping an arm around An Xiao Li's shoulder. An Xiao Li crossed her arms and sat further away from Ji Nan – so what if Ji Nan was a handsome martial arts champion, it still wasn't right for Ji Nan to invade a female's personal space!

Qin Song drove for about two hours before arriving at a restaurant. Qin Song, Ji Nan and An Xiao Li were eating peacefully, but half-way through their meal, Ji Nan's complexion paled and she put her chopsticks down and disappeared. Qin Song stood and chased after Ji Nan. Later Qin Song awkwardly scratched his head and returned to their table. 'About that... Xiao Li, mmm... can you go to the... bathroom? Ji Nan wants to borrow something from you.'

'Borrow what?' An Xiao Li asked.

Qin Song's face was bright red and he whispered a few words in An Xiao Li's ear. An Xiao Li was so shocked that she nearly hit her head into the clay pot – tampons? Ji Nan was a girl?

An Xiao Li realised her past revelations about Ji Nan were wrong – Ji Nan wasn't a handsome young man, Ji Nan was a female cross-dressing as a male!

That night An Xiao Li wanted to make it up to Ji Nan for thinking badly of Ji Nan in the past like Ji Nan's bathroom fetish. They shared the same room and An Xiao Li was considerate of Ji Nan beyond expectations, if Ji Nan went to the bathroom then An Xiao Li would follow suit.

Ji Nan came out of the bathroom and saw An Xiao Li waiting outside the

bathroom. An Xiao Li put on a jacket over her night shirt and she was rubbing her eyes, it gave Ji Nan a familiar feeling like Ji Nan met An Xiao Li before meeting third brother.

Ji Nan and An Xiao Li returned to their room. Ji Nan couldn't sleep and chatted with An Xiao Li. 'Xiao Li, you and Gu Yan are actually similar.'

'Do you mean we're both beautiful and loveable?' An Xiao Li asked in her drowsy state.

Ji Nan laughed and pinched An Xiao Li's cheek. 'Gu Yan is cold, you're a day dreamer but you both met the right person. Gu Yan has first brother and she doesn't think highly of others even more. You have third brother, no matter what a day dreamer you are, no one dares to trap you.'

'Chen Yu Bai traps me enough, as if there's anywhere left for someone else to trap me?' An Xiao Li said.

Ji Nan laughed. 'You're still young, you don't know, having one person trap you for life is a good and a beautiful situation.'

Chen Yu Bai drove his Land Rover like a maniac to the destination Qin Song gave him. He wore a white jacket over his black skivvy and pants and he also wore leather boots. After he parked his Land Rover, he jumped out, ignored Ji Nan and Qin Song and strode straight toward Xiao Li. 'Which arm is injured?'

An Xiao Li reflexively put out her injured arm for Chen Yu Bai to see. When she woke up, she felt more pain in her swollen arm than last night. But in front of Ji Nan, An Xiao Li pretended her injured arm was ok because she didn't want Ji Nan to feel bad.

Chen Yu Bai rolled up Xiao Li's shirt sleeve and looked at the bruising on her arm. He pressed gently on her arm and she took a deep breath. His hands trembled slightly and stiffened.

Ji Nan was scared for her life when she received Chen Yu Bai's icy glare. 'I didn't do it on purpose. I thought it was little Qin Song but it was Xiao Li.'

Chen Yu Bai smiled with Ji Nan and spoke gently. 'It's nothing.'

Qin Song heard his third brother's familiar gentle tone and his whole body shook. Last time his third brother used that same gentle tone he was exiled for half a year!

Chen Yu Bai maintained his smile and gentle tone. 'Let's go.'

Qin Song and Ji Nan's hearts pounded in fear of their third brother's gentleness. They quietly forced An Xiao Li to sit in the passenger seat.

Chen Yu Bai drove them along a scenic route and when they arrived back to their district, Qin Song and Ji Nan understood their fragile situation and took the initiative to go 'sightseeing.' Chen Yu Bai smiled and agreed to release them nearby Qin Sang's neighbourhood. Whereas, An Xiao Li was obviously sleeping in the passenger seat.

Chen Yu Bai parked in front of Qin Sang's house. He hesitated for a while and gently pushed Xiao Li's shoulder. 'Wake up.'

An Xiao Li mumbled in her sleep. 'Don't... little Bai... I'm sleepy...'

It was a cold morning but after Chen Yu Bai heard Xiao Li's mumbles, it felt like a warm morning.

In the past Chen Yu Bai hated Xiao Li sleeping in the most. When he had a rare weekend off, he wanted to take her out but she'd lay in bed until the afternoon. He used to think it was because he tortured her too often during week nights so he held back on Friday nights when he knew he had a weekend off. It was a waste of those Friday nights, she still slept in. She hugged the bed sheet with her eyes shut and refused to wake up. She waited for him to have an angry outburst before coaxing him. 'I'm sleepy... little Bai, I'm begging you, let me sleep in...'

Chen Yu Bai stared at Xiao Li that was sleeping soundly next to him on the passenger seat, he thought about the sense of warmth he felt when he was beside her and suddenly felt he was too foolish.

Chen Yu Bai felt that in each person's life, happiness was scarce but they had go through struggles and jump over deep holes before coincidentally meeting another person that could keep their heart. How could he easily let her go?

Finally An Xiao Li woke up, in her dreamy state she saw Chen Yu Bai was looking at her like he was reflecting. She sat upright, wiped the corner of her lips

to check if she was drooling and rubbed her tired eyes. Then she spoke in a weak voice. ‘Mmm... I’m sorry, am I delaying your plans?’

Chen Yu Bai turned away from Xiao Li and looked outside. He spoke in his usual cold tone. ‘Um.’

An Xiao Li looked outside the window and was surprised. ‘Huh? Why did you bring me here?’

Chen Yu Bai reversed the car and drove away from Qin Sang’s house. ‘I forgot you moved houses. Are you hungry?’”

An Xiao Li shook her head but changed her mind. ‘Let’s eat lunch. My treat, I want to thank you for coming to pick me up.’

‘I came to pick up Ji Nan and Qin Song,’ Chen Yu Bai declined An Xiao Li’s good intention.

An Xiao Li was familiar with Chen Yu Bai’s weird temperament. ‘Then I’m hungry, let’s got eat.’

Chen Yu Bai snorted, turned at an intersection and drove Xiao Li to a restaurant.

End of Chapter Twenty (Part 2 of 2)

Related

Chapter Twenty-One

Chapter Twenty-One

At the restaurant two bowls of congee were brought to Chen Yu Bai and Xiao Li's table. Out of habit Chen Yu Bai wrinkled his forehead and looked at Xiao Li before picking up his spoon to eat.

An Xiao Li felt refreshed after a peaceful nap so it didn't matter what angle she looked at Chen Yu Bai, she felt he was still handsome.

'Mmm... How's Seven Up?' An Xiao Li asked.

'I'm not free to look after it, thinking about letting it go within the next few days,' Chen Yu Bai said.

'Where?' An Xiao Li asked.

'Depends, if it's too bothersome I'll just take it outside to let it leave. Even if it gets hungry it won't die. But it only eats dog food, it's cold outside and I don't know if it can adapt quickly outside on its own,' Chen Yu Bai said.

An Xiao Li's spoon fell into her bowl of congee.

Chen Yu Bai used a tissue to wipe his mouth. He saw Xiao Li's startled look and he smiled. 'But if you come home and look after it, I'll think it over.'

An Xiao Li's eyes were teary after she heard Chen Yu Bai joked about her going back to his house.

An Xiao Li thought Chen Yu Bai was always like that, suddenly good to her one moment then cold the next. When they lived together they didn't fight with each other instead she was unhappy, he was angry, if he wanted to look at her then he looked at her, if he didn't want to then he snorted and left. But when his anger was provoked he had an angry outburst – 'An Xiao Li, from this moment, this minute, don't appear in front of me anymore. Or else I'll let you know what it means to be better off dead than alive.'

An Xiao Li's heart wanted to say to little Bai – 'since you appeared, she knows what it means to be better off dead than alive.'

Chen Yu Bai stopped smiling when he saw Xiao Li's eyes were teary then she cried and her tears fell into her bowl of congee. His heart tightened and he held her hand. 'I was joking, nothing to cry about.'

'What is it that you want?' An Xiao Li asked. She couldn't stop crying. She bent her head and wiped her tears. 'You said you don't want me to appear in front of you but now you're like this. Chen Yu Bai, you deserve to be hated. I wanted to help you before I thought Chu Hao Ran fainted. But you were fierce with me and threatened me... Yes, I'm always scared and don't dare to give myself away. I always want to leave you because I'm scared of getting hurt. I don't love deeply. But what about you? You always deceive me, you tell me nothing... it's obvious we're both wrong. But you're casual like this, I need to avoid you...'

Xiao Li was talking and crying at the same time. Chen Yu Bai was shocked and speechless. They were quiet for a long time before he sighed.

'It's my fault. Ask me whatever you want to know, I'll answer all your questions, ok?' Chen Yu Bai said.

Chen Yu Bai pinched Xiao Li's runny nose and her snot dribbled onto his hand. He shook his hand then wiped her tears.

An Xiao Li sniffed her nose then her phone rang and Chen Yu Bai's phone rang too.

'Big sister Xiao Li come quickly... my older sister... hospital...' Xiao Chu said in a choked voice.

Chen Yu Bai said a few words on his phone and hung up. He immediately stood, pulled Xiao Li up and took her outside.

'What is it?' An Xiao Li asked.

'Qin Sang is injured and right now she's at the hospital. Come with me to the hospital,' Chen Yu Bai explained.

Chen Yu Bai felt a cold rage, someone hurt Xiao Li's friend. Zheng Hao was attacked whilst Qin Sang was with Zheng Hao. Chen Yu Bai knew that the feud between the western district and Liang's company was going to be public knowledge.

Chen Yu Bai drove An Xiao Li to the hospital. Her legs were limp before she got out of the car. He wrapped an arm around her shoulder, she leaned into him for support and he led them inside the hospital. When they arrived at Qin Sang's hospital room, they saw Li Wei Ran escort Qin Sang's dad Qin Yue outside Qin Sang's room. Li Wei Ran and Qin Yue's expressions were distraught.

Chen Yu Bai stayed outside to talk to Li Wei Ran. Xiao Li ran to Qin Sang's bed.

Chen Yu Bai waited for Qin Yue to walk away at a far distance before he asked Li Wei Ran about Qin Sang. 'What condition is Qin Sang in?'

'A broken leg, face scratched, waist and spine is still unclear, perhaps nothing major. The doctor injected a sedative. She's sleeping at the moment, the doctor will wait until she wakes up before doing a complete examination.'

'Any news yet who's behind the attack?' Chen Yu Bai asked.

Li Wei Ran shook his head.

An Xiao Li sat beside Qin Sang's bed whilst Qin Sang was sleeping. An Xiao Li's heart wouldn't stop pounding anxiously. An Xiao Li saw how Li Wei Ran was distraught about Qin Sang too. It made An Xiao Li asked herself – if it was clear that two people could love each other, was it right for them just to take a glance at each other and pass by each other? She felt that a human lifespan was short and it wasn't easy to find someone to willingly eat a warm breakfast with.

Chen Yu Bai gently opened the door, stepped softly toward Xiao Li and stood behind her. Suddenly she turned around and hugged him.

An Xiao Li could smell the familiar cool mint scent and heard Chen Yu Bai's heartbeat was in sync with her heartbeat, it gave her a sense of peace. In that moment she was willing to be deceived for life, she was willing to be little Bai's Miss dummy.

A while later after Chen Yu Bai finished discussing plans with Li Wei Ran, they returned to Qin Sang's hospital room. Chen Yu Bai saw Xiao Li resting against Qin Sang's bed. Chen Yu Bai looked at his watch, it was late. He gently lifted Xiao Li into his arms, farewelled Li Wei Ran and carried Xiao Li outside to the elevator. When the elevator opened, she was half awake. 'Going where?'

Chen Yu Bai bent his head and gently spoke to Xiao Li. 'Right now the situation is complicated. We don't know who's behind the attack. I'm worried about your safety, tonight stay at my house, ok?' He didn't hear her make a sound, his body stiffened and he felt frustrated. 'I can sleep somewhere else.'

An Xiao Li didn't make a sound, because she wasn't certain if she misheard what Chen Yu Bai said before ok. 'I'll sleep in the guest room.'

'Um,' Chen Yu Bai said.

On the way back to Chen Yu Bai's house, he ordered for dinner to be delivered but when he heard the connection signal from the restaurant he glanced at Xiao Li. 'What do you want to eat?'

An Xiao Li was too tired to eat and shook her head.

Chen Yu Bai smiled, he ordered a few dinner dishes that Xiao Li liked to eat and chicken soup.

By the time Chen Yu Bai and Xiao Li were home, their dinner was delivered too. She woke up with a healthier appetite and happily ate the dinner dishes that she liked. He took a sip of his chicken soup, put his chopsticks down and stared at her eating for a while. Then he stood and went to his study room. He came back to the dining room and put an envelope in front of her.

Chen Yu Bai sat down, opened the envelope and took out each item one by one – there was one close up photo of Xiao Li, a listing of her awards, her college timetable, her work application and a stack of papers reporting about her daily life.

'All this is everything from two years ago after I came back from overseas, I asked an assistant to investigate about you because... honestly I didn't know the reason. The first time I met you, it was engraved in me. After I met you I was living overseas until I met Liang Fei Fang and joined Liang's company. Straight after I joined Liang's company I wanted to find you, but I saw that you were living a good life so I didn't want to bother you. Your IT college belongs to Gu Yan. Gu Yan and my first brother have contributed many scholarships. That day Wei Ran said he wanted to do a few things at your IT college, I thought of you so I went with Wei Ran. I purposely caused the car accident that day... from a distance I saw a girl that looked like you driving a car, I thought if it was you then

it was the heavens' will.'

Chen Yu Bai finished talking and An Xiao Li saw that he still looked calm. But she was too shocked and didn't notice the shyness and embarrassed look in his eyes.

'You... the first time you met me, you liked me?' An Xiao Li asked. She felt confused and didn't understand. 'All those years you couldn't forget me? The first thing you thought about after you came back from overseas was me? Later you made an effort to coincidentally meet me again?'

Chen Yu Bai bent his head and awkwardly sipped his chicken soup and reluctantly admitted the truth. 'Um, it was like that.'

The evidence in front of An Xiao Li made her happy, satisfied and her cheeks blushed pink. 'Then... why didn't you let me know from the start?'

Chen Yu Bai didn't say anything and continued to sip his chicken soup.

'Chen Yu Bai?' An Xiao Li called. Chen Yu Bai was still silent. 'Little Bai?' Finally he was too embarrassed, became angry, pursed his lips and looked away from her.

That night An Xiao Li slept lightly, she felt that her bedroom door was opened and someone gently laid on top of her...

In the morning the alarm clock rang, An Xiao Li was frustrated and fumbled around for the alarm clock to turn it off. It was a strange feeling, she remembered it wasn't her room and wondered where the alarm came from.

An Xiao Li opened her eyes and saw Chen Yu Bai sat at the head of the bed and realised what she fumbled was his body. In his hand was an alarm clock that looked like an apple, it was the same alarm clock she couldn't find when she moved out.

'Today's Sunday...' An Xiao Li said.

An Xiao Li buried her head under the bed sheet and was too lazy to move.

Chen Yu Bai felt a familiar sense of déjà vu, he lifted the bed sheet off Xiao Li, he learnt a move from Miss Chen and poked a finger into Xiao Li's cheek. 'I need to go to work and you need to come with me.'

‘I’m not your secretary anymore,’ An Xiao Li said.

An Xiao Li wrapped the bed sheet around her body and played dead.

Chen Yu Bai laid on top of An Xiao Li. He rubbed his body against the bed sheet that she wrapped around her body. ‘An Xiao Li, I don’t mind using a more intense method to wake you up...’

An Xiao Li felt her face burned hot – when they lived together, the mornings Chen Yu Bai wasn’t in a rush to go to work, the intense method he used to wake her up had many positions. Her body felt cold remembering his intense method.

An Xiao Li pushed Chen Yu Bai off her, forced herself to wake up, changed her clothes and washed her face.

When Xiao Li was eating breakfast she was still frustrated and didn’t bother to look at Chen Yu Bai. She drank her glass of milk. Chen Yu Bai’s mood was really good during breakfast, it was a long time since he had a warm breakfast. He comfortably ate his breakfast and read the newspaper. ‘Starting today, you’ll be following me, you can’t go anywhere without me. I’ll resign on your behalf at the IT company.’

An Xiao Li wrinkled her forehead. ‘No! I want to go to work!’

Chen Yu Bai had a full work schedule for the day, he looked at his watch and saw that it was nearly time to go to work. ‘Zheng Hao was attacked. In the district there are many powerful groups of people who want to inflame the feud between Liang’s company and the western district to achieve their agenda. If that’s the case then yesterday’s attack is just the beginning. Later I don’t know what will happen. So before finding out who is behind the attack, if you follow me, I can guarantee your safety.’

An Xiao Li’s throat choked. ‘The relationship between you and I... is it to the point that I can be killed by your enemy?’

‘My enemies don’t need to kill you, they just need to kidnap you and I’ll willingly exchange anything to get you back,’ Chen Yu Bai said.

The morning sunlight shone warmly on the dining table. Chen Yu Bai bent his head so An Xiao Li couldn’t see his expression clearly. She could only see his lips that were soft and beautiful. She was deeply moved and stunned whilst staring

at him.

An Xiao Li felt that even if the world wasn't at peace, she had Chen Yu Bai so she wouldn't be scared.

End of Chapter Twenty-One.

Related

part 1

Chapter Twenty-Two (Part 1)

Later in the morning all the senior directors at Liang's company understood why their cold face third master was in a good mood. Their suspicions were confirmed when their cold face third master who was always a professional suddenly brought a girl with ordinary looks with him to work, even forced the girl to sit next to him in an important work meeting.

Rong Yan took the opportunity when An Xiao Li went to the bathroom to have a battle of words with Chen Yu Bai. 'Little Bai... if third uncle is really worried about her safety then order your assistants to follow her. Can you not cling to her? I'm used to looking at delicious meat. But third uncle put a vegetarian dish in front of me, my stomach can't digest.'

Chen Yu Bai didn't bother to look at Rong Yan. 'Doesn't your stomach still have Qin Liu? Just take her out and your stomach can digest immediately.'

Liang Fei Fang knocked on the meeting table. 'The incident with Qin Sang, has that been investigated yet?'

Ji Nan shook her head. 'It's really strange, there were no holes found. Little Qin Song sent some people to investigate but couldn't find out anything. It could be someone from the western district using it as excuse to start a battle with us.'

'Where is little Qin Song?' Liang Fei Fang asked.

Ji Nan glanced at Rong Yan and saw him nod his head before she spoke. 'Since he went to visit Qin Sang yesterday, I haven't seen him return.'

Liang Fei Feng wrinkled his forehead. 'Then where's fifth brother?'

'I don't know...' Ji Nan reluctantly answered and sat behind Rong Yan in case Liang Fei Fang took his frustrations out on her.

Rong Yan looked at Ji Nan and spoke up for her. 'Go to the bathroom and see how third master's little darling is faring. It's been a long time, don't say that she fell into the toilet.'

Ji Nan bolted to the bathroom. A disgruntled Chen Yu Bai glared at Rong Yan.

‘Those two missing kiddos need to hold back a little, they shouldn’t let others see them as a waste of space,’ Liang Fei Fang said.

Chen Yu Bai laughed coldly. Rong Yan shrugged his shoulders and counter attacked Liang Fei Fang. ‘If it isn’t straight at the top then it’s crooked at the bottom. You don’t have the right to criticise them – the magnitude of your treatment of big sister Gu Yan is greater than those two missing kiddos combined.’

Liang Fei Fang looked like he was about to hit Rong Yan, but Rong Yan wisely disappeared from the meeting room. Liang Fei Fang couldn’t delegate after work duties to fifth and sixth brother so Liang Fei Fang and Chen Yu Bai were forced to split up and attend the work dinner banquets later that night.

At a work dinner banquet, An Xiao Li felt it was the part of the day she anticipated the most since following Chen Yu Bai all day. The table were layered with delicious dinner dishes, it was only An Xiao Li who focused on eating. She saw that most of the beer belly old men circled Chen Yu Bai and forced Chen Yu Bai to drink wine with them.

‘Why aren’t you substituting CEO Chen to drink wine?’ a sly beer belly young man asked An Xiao Li.

The beer belly young man lifted a glass of wine and passed it to An Xiao Li and she was forced to accept the glass of wine in front of her. But before the glass of wine touched her lips, Chen Yu Bai was by her side. Chen Yu Bai held her wrist. ‘CEO Tao, I’m sorry. My girlfriend is still young and doesn’t understand the situation, I’m sorry for troubling you.’

Chen Yu Bai took the glass of wine Xiao Li held and emptied it in his mouth. CEO Tao laughed a jolly laugh, patted Chen Yu Bai’s shoulder and praised him for his chivalry.

Chen Yu Bai forced a smile and said a few words to CEO Tao. Then Chen Yu Bai bent his head and whispered in Xiao Li’s ear. ‘If you’re full go outside and sit, it’s more peaceful there. Wait until I’m done here I’ll come and find you. Don’t run around wildly, ok?’

An Xiao Li was still in a dreamy state, because Chen Yu Bai acknowledged her as his girlfriend so when he was whispering in her ear she couldn't control herself and kissed his cheek. Then she took her bright red face to run outside.

Outside was like a palace garden, the harmonious sounds of the running water compelled An Xiao Li to play the piano in the garden. An Xiao Li wore a white dress and she looked like a tiny figurine in front of the piano. Her long hair was silky smooth and flowed to her waist. She focused on playing a beautiful song but she couldn't remember the title of the song.

When An Xiao Li was a kid, Miss Chen took her to a music school to learn to play musical instruments. Perhaps it was a Tuesday or a Wednesday, she played on a piano a song Miss Chen wrote for her in front of the class and her music teacher scored her 100 points. Her music teacher felt that she unearthed a musical genius inside An Xiao Li. Her music teacher was deeply moved and requested An Xiao Li to read the notes on the music sheet out loud in front of the class. There were two red roses tied to An Xiao Li's hair, she stood proudly in front of the class and read the notes loud and clear. 'Four, three, five, six, three, two, one, two, four, three, two, five...'

That day An Xiao Li's music teacher personally took An Xiao Li who held a written warning in her hands home. Miss Chen read what was in An Xiao Li's hands and Miss Chen's lioness roar was heard throughout the building and the nearby school.

An Xiao Li was immersed in her childhood memories until she heard a commotion, she turned around – it was a sight that spoiled the beautiful garden.

Xiao Mian saw An Xiao Li and stepped toward her to greet her. 'Did you come with Chen Yu Bai?'

Xiao Mian laughed mockingly. An Xiao Li's tongue was lazy to reply, her head nodded for her tongue.

'Miss An you're a capable girl. In the past the third master of Liang's company had ancient wise eyes grown on top of his head, yet he can still love you. Let alone Chu Hao Ran, chewing on old grass again,' Xiao Mian said spitefully.

An Xiao Li understood Xiao Mian was demeaning her, but she felt what he said was reasonable and her tongue was forced to reply. 'You praise me too much.'

Xiao Mian's smiling lips stiffened then awkwardly laughed coldly. He turned around to go back inside when he saw Chen Yu Bai coming toward him and An Xiao Li.

'Oh. CEO Chen, it's been a while since we met,' Xiao Mian said.

Chen Yu Bai didn't bother looking at Xiao Mian and strode straight to An Xiao Li's side. Chen Yu Bai rubbed her head and spoke gently. 'Done, let's go home.'

An Xiao Li smiled brightly and nodded her head.

Xiao Mian fumed at An Xiao Li and Chen Yu Bai's retreating backs. Xiao Mian spoke in a loud voice. 'Hey! Chen Yu Bai, if you're a man let's have a one on one fist fight!'

Chen Yu Bai stopped, turned around and coldly looked at Xiao Mian. 'I'm certain I'm a man. Whether you're a man or not, I'm sorry, only the heavens and earth know.'

Xiao Mian's minions were nearby and stepped forward intending to join in a fist fight, but they laughed boisterously when they heard an undeniable truth about the unmanly Xiao Mian.

The following morning Chen Yu Bai and An Xiao Li fought loudly, because of one phone call.

Just before the phone call, Chen Yu Bai was hugging Xiao Li in bed sleeping. When he heard Xiao Li's phone ringing, he didn't think and carelessly answered Xiao Li's phone. Unexpectedly, the caller was Miss Chen.

By the time An Xiao Li grabbed her phone back, Miss Chen was furious and informed that Miss Chen was going to visit An Xiao Li the next day. Before Miss Chen hung up, she warned An Xiao Li to prepare the soul.

An Xiao Li felt that it seemed Miss Chen didn't recognise Chen Yu Bai's voice so An Xiao Li decided to find someone to temporarily substitute her boyfriend. Compared to living together with someone before marriage and living with Chen Yu Bai before marriage, An Xiao Li was certain that the former would make her suffer less under Miss Chen's hands.

An Xiao Li's suggestion evoked an explosive fight over 'status.' That fight was different to their past fights, because it was little Bai who felt insecure and used. He felt that he was eaten thoroughly but wasn't paid and acknowledged – he became the past An Xiao Li.

'I didn't say I'm not letting you meet Miss Chen, it's just we shouldn't provoke Miss Chen's temper all at once. The past few years my mum's body has bloated, her blood pressure is high, if she's too shocked...' An Xiao Li reasoned.

'Be quiet!' Chen Yu Bai ordered. The veins on his skin popped up. 'Be good and let me tell Miss Chen about us.'

'I don't want to!' An Xiao Li protested. 'If you tell her about us, I'll deny everything.'

'Give it a try,' Chen Yu Bai threatened.

Chen Yu Bai in his angry state, he didn't notice that his arm hit against a pillar until it was too late. He snorted and scrunched his face in pain.

'Oh... are you hurt?' An Xiao Li asked sweetly.

Chen Yu Bai laughed coldly. 'I don't need you to care!'

End of Chapter Twenty-Two (Part 1)

Related

part 2

Chapter Twenty-Two (Part 2)

Qin Song was shaking in the backseat, he buckled his seatbelt and his two hands gripped the side door handle. Qin Song personally confirmed that the Infiniti was a real race car, because Chen Yu Bai was the Infiniti's driver and Chen Yu Bai drove like a contender for first place in a car race.

An Xiao Li didn't dare to look ahead, she leaned back on the Infiniti death seat, her eyes were closed and she played dead.

Finally the Infiniti parked at the terminal, Qin Song's complexion was bleached white and his palms were pressed against the backseat car window. His breathing was weak as his shaky voice. 'On the way back... big sister Xiao Li, can you call a taxi?'

An Xiao Li's mouth was still gaped opened. Chen Yu Bai who was cranky replied to Qin Song first. 'Sixth uncle, what do you think?'

Qin Song looked at An Xiao Li resentfully. Ji Nan only kicked An Xiao Li once, but Ji Nan suddenly disappeared out of fear – Ji Nan's 'excuse' was that she was forced to have an arranged marriage by her family because they thought she was ripe for marriage. Whereas he was forced to be An Xiao Li's pretend boyfriend. After his pretend boyfriend act was done, it'd be a tragic ending for him, his third brother was going to tear his body apart!

Qin Song knew that An Xiao Li wasn't a beauty, but why was she more of a medusa than first brother's Gu Yan? Qin Song felt that meeting An Xiao Li was deadly, and pretending to be her boyfriend under his third brother's hawk watch sealed his fate.

The moment Miss Chen was picked up by An Xiao Li, Miss Chen grilled An Xiao Li in her fierce style. Miss Chen pulled An Xiao Li's ear hard and An Xiao Li cried out for mercy.

Qin Song laughed happily on the sidelines until Chen Yu Bai kicked Qin Song from behind. Qin Song knew what he had to do to appease Chen Yu Bai. Qin

Song stepped toward Miss Chen to rescue the medusa.

‘Hello aunty! I’m Qin Song. Qin from the Qin Dynasty and Song as in conqueror,’ Qin Song joked.

Qin Song’s joke wasn’t appreciated by the medusa’s mum and his cheeky smiling face turned to stone.

‘Mum, this is my boyfriend. Mum can you let go of my ear... it’s painful to death,’ An Xiao Li said.

Miss Chen let go of An Xiao Li’s red ear and Miss Chen’s fierce eyes assessed Qin Song who was looking at Chen Yu Bai. Chen Yu Bai stood at a distance from them, his lips were pursed and he avoided eye contact with Miss Chen.

‘Qin Song...’ Miss Chen called. She looked away from Chen Yu Bai and cautiously grilled Qin Song. ‘You... are Xiao Li’s boyfriend? My An Xiao Li?’

Qin Song felt that death was within a hand’s reach from him, he closed his eyes and nodded his head like he was waiting for death’s hand to touch him.

Miss Chen was half happy and half worried, the little boy Qin Song was more beautiful than her daughter, if they were actually dating their looks weren’t compatible. But Miss Chen’s intuition made her glance at her nephew’s eyes and knew the little boy Qin Song wasn’t her daughter’s boyfriend.

Qin Song was the type of person that was used to sucking up to adults and combatted Miss Chen with his charm. It was obvious Miss Chen was immersed by Qin Song’s charm and didn’t mention about dealing with An Xiao Li’s soul again.

At night when they were eating peeled fruits, Miss Chen knocked on the table and laughed cheekily. ‘You two are too sweet, I won’t bother you two anymore. I’ll sleep at Yu Bai’s house instead.’

An Xiao Li’s body stiffened and her mouth that was chewing watermelon choked. She coughed to spit out the choking watermelon. Chen Yu Bai who was frustrated with the situation, patted her back. He saw her neck turned pink and he became more frustrated and impatient.

Miss Chen wasn’t as sympathetic toward her daughter and complained about

her daughter in front of Qin Song. 'This little girl has no stamina.' She laughed with Qin Song. 'Take a look at her, she's not like me at all.'

Qin Song followed An Xiao Li's choking motions and jetted out tea from his mouth.

'Little Song, tell me about yours and Xiao Li's love story,' Miss Chen said. She gripped Qin Song's hands in excitement. 'Don't worry aunty is very easy going.'

Qin Song coughed. 'Aunty... rest assure Xiao Li and I have planned it all out.'

An Xiao Li secretly glanced at Chen Yu Bai's reaction and laughed awkwardly. 'Mum, you can stay at my house. It's been a long time since I got to sleep with mum.'

Miss Chen drank her cup of tea and smiled cheekily. 'Then you and I can both stay at your cousin's house, because I want to talk with my good daughter too. Little Song, you don't mind?'

Apart from the medusa, everyone at the table were intelligent people. Qin Song didn't need to hear anymore and realised the truth was already exposed. Qin Song shook his head helplessly and assessed his third brother's reaction. Chen Yu Bai was suppressing anger but Qin Song knew that Chen Yu Bai caught onto everything too.

Qin Song felt that An Xiao Li was indeed a dummy, but he didn't know what the two wicked belly oxen were calculating in their hearts. Qin Song scratched his head because he didn't understand why he was pulled into the wicked bellies' plan if the truth was exposed long ago.

It was a windy and a murderous night.

The moment Chen Yu Bai, Miss Chen and An Xiao Li entered his house, Seven Up charged toward a startled Xiao Li and she hid behind him. Seven Up kept chasing after Xiao Li and rubbing its paws against Xiao Li's leg. Chen Yu Bai wrinkled his forehead and scolded Seven Up. Seven Up whimpered pitifully, took back its paws and ran back to its delegated resting spot.

Miss Chen smiled slyly but didn't say anything about her nephew's dog who

was familiar with her daughter.

Chen Yu Bai gave Miss Chen and An Xiao Li new toiletries. He told them that he was tired so he was sleeping first.

Miss Chen also vocalised her tiredness and ordered An Xiao Li to fill the spa with water for Miss Chen to relax. An Xiao Li followed Empress Miss Chen's order and went into the bathroom and prepared the spa for Empress Miss Chen. An Xiao Li received a second order, which was not to bother Empress Miss Chen for an hour whilst she was enjoying a spa bath. An Xiao Li retreated from the bathroom and rushed to Chen Yu Bai's bedroom.

Inside Chen Yu Bai's bedroom, An Xiao Li saw that he just finished taking a shower because his hair was still wet. He wore a bathrobe and was sitting on a chair near the window whilst he smoked a cigarette.

An Xiao Li found an ashtray and gave it to Chen Yu Bai, but he didn't look at her and flicked the cigarette ashes on the floor.

An Xiao Li knelt in front of Chen Yu Bai's chair and looked up at him. He ignored her, she pitifully pulled his bathrobe sleeve. 'Little Bai...'

Chen Yu Bai was still angry and didn't want to take any notice of Xiao Li. But he heard her call his name weakly and couldn't control himself and looked down at her. 'Cousin, what is it?'

An Xiao Li felt the resentment in the air weakened and couldn't hold back her laugh.

Chen Yu Bai squashed the cigarette onto the windowsill, stood and went to the bed. He crawled under the bed sheet and curled his body.

An Xiao Li saw Chen Yu Bai went to bed with wet hair and ran into his bathroom and returned to the bed with a hair dryer. She knelt on the bed and blow dried his hair.

Usually when they were together she took it for granted, but she felt the hour of freedom Miss Chen granted was extremely valuable. It made her realised that it was good to be together with her man that was cold on the outside but childish on the inside.

‘I was in the wrong. Wait until Miss Chen goes back home, I’ll call her and tell her about us, ok?’ An Xiao Li asked and pressed her cheek against Chen Yu Bai’s cheek.

‘What did you say?’ Chen Yu Bai asked coldly.

‘I said... what you wanted to hear,’ An Xiao Li teased.

Chen Yu Bai snorted, rolled over and Xiao Li was underneath him. He rolled the bed sheet around them then rolled them close to the edge of the bed and she clung onto him.

‘Why don’t you tell her now?’ Chen Yu Bai asked.

‘Mum will beat me to death,’ An Xiao Li said.

‘Aren’t you scared if you tell her over the phone, she’ll come back here again?’ Chen Yu Bai asked.

‘Mum’s a lazy person, she won’t come back. Wait until mum returns home and she won’t be angry anymore. Besides, you wouldn’t let her beat me to death, right?’ An Xiao Li said.

‘Um,’ Chen Yu Bai said after a long time.

That windy and murderous night, An Xiao Li felt particularly at peace. In the past she felt she didn’t see Chen Yu Bai clearly and that was why she was felt impatient and was suspicious of his intentions. But after a lot of time passed, finally she understood that with love she didn’t need to understand everything about him. She just needed to be certain about one thing, her little Bai wouldn’t allow anyone to hurt her.

End of Chapter Twenty-two (Part 2)

Related

part 3

Chapter Twenty-Two (Part 3 of 3)

Miss Chen stayed for three days. Qin Song was a dutiful pretend boyfriend, he picked up Miss Chen early each morning and took her sightseeing and to eat at fancy restaurants.

Early morning, An Xiao Li woke up and didn't know where Miss Chen disappeared to. An exhausted An Xiao Li washed her face, brushed her teeth and stepped out of the bathroom to go back to her room to change into work clothes. Outside the bathroom she saw Chen Yu Bai stepped out from the dining room. 'Where's Miss Chen?'

Chen Yu Bai put on his work jacket. 'Your boyfriend took her to see a sunrise.'

'Oh,' An Xiao Li said.

These past few days Chen Yu Bai was in a sour mood so An Xiao Li was used to his curt replies.

Xiao Li turned away from Chen Yu Bai and stepped toward her room. He felt the sadness in his heart rose up and grabbed her arm, she turned around and he glared at her. She wore light yellow pyjamas and he felt her face was a flower blooming in the morning. He felt confused, he couldn't hold back and pinched her cheek hard enough to make her cry out.

'An Xiao Li, you're a scam artist!' Chen Yu Bai said and kissed An Xiao Li.

When Chen Yu Bai let An Xiao Li breathe, she weakly replied. 'Miss Chen... will be home soon.'

It was a long time since Chen Yu Bai got to have sex with Xiao Li, he couldn't control his urges and with one hand he tore off her nightgown...

Qin Song was drinking morning tea with Miss Chen when he received a phone call from his third brother. Qin Song heard shady heavy breathing from Chen Yu Bai's end. 'Sixth uncle, where are you... don't move!'

Qin Song was scared of Chen Yu Bai's unexpected morning call and the lively

sounds from Chen Yu Bai's end. Qin Song mumbled curses on his end and occasionally heard An Xiao Li's moans from Chen Yu Bai's end. Qin Song's heart pound, his lips dried, his tongue was bitter and his legs shook out of fear of the mixed moans and groans he didn't want neither Miss Chen or himself hear from Chen Yu Bai's end.

Miss Chen leaned closer to Qin Song at the table and whispered softly to Qin Song. 'Chen Yu Bai?'

Qin Song nodded his head. Miss Chen laughed wickedly. 'Aunty wants to go to the supermarkets, tell him not to wait for us and go ahead and eat lunch.'

By the time Qin Song drove Miss Chen back to Chen Yu Bai's house it was four in the afternoon. Qin Song carried the heavier grocery bag and Miss Chen carried the lighter grocery bag into Chen Yu Bai's house.

Miss Chen asked Qin Song to unpack the grocery bags in the kitchen whilst she rested on the sofa in the living room. An Xiao Li was a dutiful daughter in the afternoon and brought a cup of milk tea to the living for Miss Chen.

'Oh? Why are you and Yu Bai home early from work?' Miss Chen teased. 'And why are you two all covered up?' She was suspicious of her daughter and her nephew wearing turtle necks. 'Turn on the heater and quickly go change clothes. Later I'll make braised beef in the kitchen for dinner.'

An embarrassed An Xiao Li retreated whilst Chen Yu Bai coughed. At that moment Qin Song ran out of the kitchen and complained the house was too cold.

An embarrassed Chen Yu Bai heard Qin Song's complaints about being cold and Chen Yu Bai gave Qin Song an icy glare. Qin Song froze on the spot then he quietly went to look for more clothes to wear.

Miss Chen spared An Xiao Li and Chen Yu Bai from further embarrassment and Miss Chen quietly went into the kitchen to cook dinner.

During dinner Qin Song sucked up to Miss Chen by praising her cooking to the point of making her fly half-way to heaven. Miss Chen's giddiness made her open a bottle of wine that Chen Yu Bai kept for a long time. The four people at the dining table ate and drank everything on the dining table. A drunk and tired An

Xiao Li slumped onto the dining table and slept. Qin Song saw that Miss Chen and Chen Yu Bai were having a dagger glaring match and wisely left the battle field, he zoomed back home.

Miss Chen picked up another bottle of wine, pulled Chen Yu Bai's ear hard and dragged him outside to the balcony. Seven Up saw the master being bullied by an intimidating Miss Chen and like Qin Song, Seven Up wisely disappeared too.

'Chen Yin Ren, aunt you're still violent like in the past,' Chen Yu Bai said coldly and rubbed his sore ear.

Miss Chen laughed. 'Yu Bai, how long has it been since we drank wine together?'

'You want to reminisce about the past with me?' Chen Yu Bai asked.

'What if I don't? Perhaps you want to talk about the future with your aunt?' Miss Chen alluded.

Chen Yu Bai looked into the dining room and stared at Miss dummy who was still sleeping soundly on the dining table. 'I admit defeat. Don't go in circles anymore, what does aunt want?'

Miss Chen laughed loudly. 'Your aunt doesn't want her to suffer.'

Chen Yu Bai lifted the bottle of wine, opened it and took a sip. 'On that point we're alike.'

'Yu Bai, in your aunt's life apart from An Bu San and Xiao Li, what I'm proud about most is helping to raise and parent you,' Miss Chen confessed. She looked up at the dark night sky. 'But you were never an ordinary kid. If Xiao Li follows you she'll be really tired and you'll be tired too. When that time comes, how pitiful will Xiao Li be? While you still feel compassion for her, you should think about what will happen in the future. Why don't you call it quits right now?'

Chen Yu Bai quietly sipped more wine.

'Considering the Chen household's environment, it's going to be very hard for Xiao Li to marry into the Chen household. Your old man Chen Yin Jiang will not like her,' Miss Chen said in a serious tone. She hated living in a stern family the most. 'The two of you being together will not always be as good as right now.'

You're a man, you can't just think about yourself, you also need to think about the other person. Especially if that person is your closest aunt's only beloved daughter.'

Chen Yu Bai laughed loudly and turned around to look at his aunt. In his eyes was a cold light. 'Aunt you're old already. Right now cast your mind back to that year you ran off with An Bu San. What did my grandma say and think about? Right now I'll give you a mirror and you'll immediately remember and understand.'

Miss Chen motionlessly stared up at the dark night sky and Chen Yu Bai couldn't see her expression clearly. She was quiet for a long time.

'Chen Yin Ren, I'm also like aunt. I'm unable to bear any arrangement made by my family,' Chen Yu Bai said. 'I'll marry her and I'll make certain to give her a happy life.'

Miss Chen laughed and stood. 'I have no control anymore, each generation have their own blessings. If you keep your promise, I'll help you deal with An Bu San. I don't care about Chen Yin Jiang. But if there's a day that Xiao Li is unhappy and runs home, even if your aunt has to pick up a blade I'll make certain to force her to go on an arranged date and marry her off to another man.'

End of Chapter Twenty-two (Part 3 of 3)

Related

part 1

Chapter Twenty-three (Part 1)

After a work day Chen Yu Bai took An Xiao Li to the hospital to visit Qin Sang.

On the way home from the hospital, An Xiao Li was crying because she was sad that Qin Sang was both heartbroken and in physical pain. Chen Yu Bai drove and passed An Xiao Li tissues at the same time. By the time they arrived at his house, her voice was hoarse. He sighed, carried her out of the car and upstairs into his house.

Inside the living room Chen Yu Bai put Xiao Li on the sofa and went into the kitchen to pour her a glass of water. Then he passed her the glass of water and hugged her on the sofa. 'Don't cry anymore.'

Chen Yu Bai wasn't a sweet talker nor did he know how to comfort someone else so he didn't know what to say to comfort Xiao Li. A while later she was still crying, he hugged her tighter and wiped her tears. 'This weekend can you come to my parents' house for dinner?'

An Xiao Li cried and shook her head at the same time, she wasn't in the mood to go anywhere.

Chen Yu Bai was unhappy Xiao Li rejected an invite to eat at his parents' house and he pinched her cheek. She bent her head and bit his hand to vent her sad mood. They quietly played around for a while and her mood improved. She rested against his chest. 'Do you think one day you'll suddenly have a change of heart, find another girl and treat her better than me?'

Chen Yu Bai rubbed Xiao Li's head. 'If this weekend you come with me to eat dinner with my parents' house then I won't suddenly have a change of heart.'

'Then beg me and I'll go,' An Xiao Li said.

Chen Yu Bai became quiet, Xiao Li tilted her head up and looked at him. But his hand pressed her head down so she couldn't see him. 'I'm begging you...'

'Begging me what?' An Xiao Li asked.

Chen Yu Bai never thought there'd be a day that he'd beg another person. 'I'm begging you to come with me to my parents' house for dinner.'

'Um,' An Xiao Li said shyly.

Chen Yu Bai felt an itchy feeling all over, even his teeth itched. He kissed Xiao Li and his breathing was heavy.

It was a cool summer night. After a long time of pleasure, Chen Yu Bai covered Xiao Li's body with a bed sheet and hugged her. 'Xiao Li, let's get married.'

An Xiao Li was tired and her body was limp. 'That's too troublesome. Miss Chen and Mr An won't agree.'

'I'll find a way to convince them,' Chen Yu Bai said.

'It seems your mum doesn't like me,' An Xiao Li said.

'I like you,' Chen Yu Bai said.

Chen Yu Bai confessed his feelings in such a casual manner that the whole house was quiet. An Xiao Li widened her eyes, she looked at the dark night and couldn't believe what she heard. She felt his strong heartbeat against her back.

'Then... talk about it later. First I'll see if you can convince our families,' An Xiao Li said softly.

Chen Yu Bai laughed, rubbed his nose on the back of Xiao Li's neck and hugged her tighter from behind.

At Chen Yu Bai's parents' house, An Xiao Li thought that Chen Yu Bai looked like his dad, minus the beer belly and add a full set of black hair. The moment An Xiao Li saw Chen Yin Jiang's shiny bald head, An Xiao Li remembered Miss Chen's advice to scold the 'bald old man' and An Xiao Li felt her throat was choked with laughter.

Chen Yu Bai hugged Xiao Li's shoulder and his hand moved slightly on her shoulder. She lifted her head and he glared at her.

The kids of the Chen household liked An Xiao Li's carefree attitude and they showed her around the house. In the living room only Chen Yu Bai and his

parents were left.

Mrs Chen senior sighed and looked at her son sadly. 'Yu Bai, I really don't like her.'

Chen Yin Jiang nodded his head slowly and agreed with his wife's thoughts. 'She's a good girl, but she's not suitable to be our daughter-in-law.'

Chen Yu Bai comfortably sat on the sofa and drank tea.

Chen Yin Jiang was frustrated with his son's attitude. 'Chen Yu Bai.'

Chen Yu Bai lifted his head from his cup of tea and looked coldly at his dad. 'I don't have an opinion. But if I'm going to marry, it has to be her.'

Chen Yu Bai's tone was gentle, but Mr and Mrs Chen senior's faces paled.

Compared to Chen Yu Bai marrying a girl that Mr and Mrs Chen senior didn't like, Mr and Mrs Chen senior's main worry was their genius, brilliant, elegant and perfect son – following principles and not marrying.

Chen Yu Bai put his cup of tea on the coffee table. 'I respect both of your opinions so I brought her here to meet both of you. If you both give your blessings then I'll start wedding preparations. If you both really don't want to give your blessings then forget about me marrying.'

Chen Yu Bai's tone of voice was firm, Mrs Chen senior succumbed first and pulled Mr Chen senior's shirt sleeve. Mr Chen senior felt helpless and angry. 'Insolent kid!'

An Xiao Li felt dinner at the Chen household was a scary sight. At the long dining table there were about two dozen people. It seemed like Chen Yu Bai was an important person in the Chen household, he sat on the left side of Chen Yin Jiang and Chen Yu Bai forced An Xiao Li to sit next to Chen Yu Bai on his right.

The kids that played with An Xiao Li before sat quietly at the dining table, all their little heads were lowered and breathlessly ate their dinner.

An Xiao Li wasn't used to eating with fancy utensils, she could only make clinking noises with the fancy utensils. Mrs Chen senior stared at An Xiao Li anxiously, finally Mrs Chen senior succeeded and An Xiao Li wasn't in the mood

to try to eat.

An Xiao Li realised little Bai grew up under such circumstances, no wonder he was so cold, she felt he was really pitiful. She tilted her head and with sympathetic eyes she faced little Bai.

Chen Yu Bai cut up all the food on his plate and pushed his plate in front of Xiao Li.

An Xiao Li felt that Chen Yu Bai's mood improved after the frustrating dinner at his parents' house. If any of his family members tried to talk to him, he glared at them and they looked like they were scared to death. Chen Yu Bai only sat for a little while after dinner then he abruptly farewell his parents, stood and left with An Xiao Li.

In the car, An Xiao Li fretted and felt utterly defeated.

'I'll take you out, ok?' Chen Yu Bai asked happily.

An Xiao Li looked at Chen Yu Bai and she hesitated to tell him about her thoughts for a while. 'Chen Yu Bai, it seems your parents don't like me, why don't we... temporarily forget about marriage?'

Suddenly Chen Yu Bai slammed the brakes hard, An Xiao Li flung forward. She almost flew out of the car, her shaky hands gripped her seatbelt and the side of her seat. She slowly turned her head and saw his scary expression so she laughed sweetly. 'I... was joking.'

Chen Yu Bai relaxed his fisted hands, snorted and let Xiao Li's tasteless joke slide.

End of Chapter Twenty-three (Part 1)

Related

part 2

Chapter Twenty-three (Part 2 of 2)

Qin Song rented a forest for hunting. By the time Chen Yu Bai and An Xiao Li arrived, everyone else were already horse riding.

In the distance, An Xiao Li saw strangers wearing hunting outfits and hunting guns were strapped around their shoulders. The strangers rode horses in pairs and they chased wild beasts. An Xiao Li threw away all her worries from meeting Chen Yu Bai's family, she grabbed his arm and she jumped excitedly.

Chen Yu Bai led Xiao Li to a nearby place to change into hunting outfits then they went horse riding. He was good at horse riding, but she could only ride a gentle pony assisted by the hunting grounds staff. Fortunately he was patient, held her reigns and rode slowly beside her pony around the woods.

That day of horse riding passed by fast and Qin Song's guests were invited to Golden Age for dinner.

During dinner An Xiao Li pulled Chen Yu Bai's shirt sleeve and whispered in his ear. 'What's the situation between Li Wei Ran and Qin Song?'

Chen Yu Bai flicked Xiao Li's forehead. 'Don't ask about them. Do you want me to punish you?'

Xiao Li turned away from Chen Yu Bai and he thought the way she sulked was loveable. He passed her a glass of tropical juice as a peace offering. 'No one can interfere with their private lives, you don't need to worry about them. What do you think about... taking me home to your parents?'

An Xiao Li felt reluctant about Chen Yu Bai asking her parents to give their blessings to marry her. 'Little Bai, are you certain we'll get married?'

An Xiao Li wasn't certain someone like Chen Yu Bai wanted to be her husband. She didn't know why each time she thought about marrying him, she felt insecure.

'An Xiao Li!' Chen Yu Bai called.

Chen Yu Bai was frustrated to death. He calculated a thousand steps for them to reach the point of marriage, but Xiao Li didn't progress from the same spot and she still wondered whether she should stay or run away from him. Even his confidence wavered, he felt insecure and frustrated. Her reluctance to marry him made him speechless, he didn't know what to say anymore.

Whilst Chen Yu Bai was in a defeated state, Ji Nan came to drag Xiao Li to play cards. He was worried he couldn't hold back his frustrations and that he'd hit someone so he pushed Xiao Li toward Ji Nan.

Chen Yu Bai scanned the restaurant and found Qin Sang sitting at the bar. He went to sit next to Qin Sang to talk about Xiao Li.

Chen Yu Bai sat silently for a long time next to Qin Sang, whilst she sipped her glass of wine. There was always a clear line between them, Qin Sang knew if there wasn't anything wrong then Chen Yu Bai wouldn't be bored enough to sit next to Qin Sang.

'Speak up, what's wrong?' Qin Sang asked.

'Do you need me to remind you about Wei Ran and Song Song?' Chen Yu Bai asked.

'Do you need me to tell you how scared An Xiao Li will be if she brings you home to meet her parents as her boyfriend?' Qin Sang asked.

Qin Sang and Chen Yu Bai looked at each other and laughed.

'You and I live very tiring lives,' Qin Sang said. She slumped on the bar table and sighed. 'Chen Yu Bai, sometimes I think if I can choose then I truly want to be Xiao Li.'

'If An Xiao Li didn't exist, you'll be an ideal girl to me,' Chen Yu Bai said.

Chen Yu Bai picked up his glass of wine and clinked Qin Sang's glass of wine. He tilted his head back and drained the wine down his throat.

'Thank you,' Qin Sang said.

'What should I do about Xiao Li?' Chen Yu Bai asked.

'Let her do whatever she wants,' Qin Sang said. She sipped more wine. 'We're already this tired, it doesn't matter if we're a little more tired. No one forced you

to be foolishly in love with her.'

Chen Yu Bai frowned and he clinked another glass of wine with Qin Sang's glass of wine. 'We're the same. You're just as foolish.'

End of Chapter Twenty-three (Part 2 of 2)

Related

Chapter Twenty-Four

Chapter Twenty-four

At a work banquet organised by Li Wei Ran and Qin Song, the guests included all of Liang's company's clients, the families of Liang's company's major stakeholders and the media representatives were also invited.

When it was time for the surprise event Chen Yu Bai setup for Xiao Li, he took a deep breath, stood and rubbed her head. 'I need to go somewhere for a while. Be good and stay here, don't move from this seat.'

Xiao Li nodded her head, but Chen Yu Bai was still worried she wouldn't sit still. He glanced at their surroundings then he stepped closer to Xiao Li and he whispered in her ear. 'You can't move from this seat, otherwise later I'll punish you according to three meals plus afternoon tea and midnight snack.'

Xiao Li's eyes widened and she quickly nodded her head. After Chen Yu Bai was reassured she'd stay in her seat, he stepped toward the stage.

The stage curtains were slowly pulled up, the banquet hall lights were all turned off including the crystal chandeliers above the dining tables so everywhere inside the banquet hall was dark.

A spotlight appeared in the middle of the stage, the band was nowhere to be seen but one black piano was left on the stage.

In front of the black piano on the stage was a handsome man. From An Xiao Li's seat she saw he blinked frantically, the handsome man was someone dear to her.

Qin Sang lifted up her dress hem and ran in the dark toward An Xiao Li's seat. Qin Sang abandoned public protocols and knelt down beside An Xiao Li then Qin Sang pinched An Xiao Li's thigh hard and Qin Sang spoke in a soft voice. 'The paparazzi are taking photos! Close your mouth and swallow your saliva.'

An Xiao Li in her dream state looked at her surroundings and she saw all the camera lens were focused on her.

An Xiao Li felt that night was going to be the most romantic moment of her life

so she quickly closed her mouth and lowered her head shyly.

Unfortunately for An Xiao Li, later when Chen Yu Bai flipped through their photo album, in one of the photos he saw her indifference expression and posture during the once in a lifetime surprise event he performed in public for her. He was angry enough to carry out his threat and punished her for three meals plus afternoon tea and midnight snack.

But in the most romantic moment of An Xiao Li's life, her attention was solely focused on the handsome man in front of the black piano. He slowly extended his right hand and placed his beautiful long fingers on the piano and she felt the scene in front of her eyes was as beautiful as a dream. He performed a well-known piano song – 'For Elise.'

Perhaps because Chen Yu Bai performed the piano song with only his right hand so the song didn't sound as smooth. But An Xiao Li felt each sound was clear and harmonised with the rare gentleness on his face. The rest of the audience like An Xiao Li also felt the pure sincerity slowly drawn from Chen Yu Bai as he played each music note.

The screen on the stage was turned on. The screen displayed a maple leaf background and handwritten words that were recognisable to An Xiao Li, everyone at Liang's company and Liang's company's clients. The handwriting was the same distinguished, sharp dragon and phoenix dance flowing handwriting that were evident on numerous contracts, it was written by – Chen Yu Bai.

Chen Yu Bai's handwritten words on the screen gave off a lively aura and the words combined deeply moved An Xiao Li and everyone else in the audience.

I love you,

Not only for what you are

But for what I am when I am with you.

I love you,

Not only for what you have made of yourself,

But for what you are making of me.

I love you,

For the part of me that you bring out.

In the midst of the silence, Chen Yu Bai looked below the stage. He didn't see anything or anyone except for his Elise who sat speechless on the same seat he asked her to sit on.

An Xiao Li's eyes reciprocated the intensity in Chen Yu Bai's eyes. She held in her breath and she felt her heart thumped and bloomed. In her eyes she saw a pure spotlight on her prince who shed his steely armour for her.

Chen Yu Bai never expected there was a dummy like Xiao Li who entered his life, capable of evoking the pure belief that was vulnerable as a maple leaf and buried deep in his heart. He never thought someone as strong as him could be gentle and he felt being with Xiao Li the chaotic world around him transformed into a beautiful world.

The intense look Chen Yu Bai and An Xiao Li exchanged in that moment was a silent vow. They vowed to be together with each other until death. Even after death they vowed to find each other and they'd hold hands to be together forever.

In that moment Chen Yu Bai also felt he was a dummy like Xiao Li. He saw Xiao Li was scared of embarrassing him in public, because she tried to hide her face from the camera lens. But Xiao Li couldn't hide the tears that flowed down her cheeks from him.

The usual indifferent Qin Sang who stood behind Miss dummy was also moved to tears.

After the banquet and Chen Yu Bai's moving public declaration, Chen Yu Bai and An Xiao Li took a spa bath together at Chen Yu Bai's house. Because both their moods were restless they were unusually quiet. In the spa she rested her back on his warm chest and she felt a strange warm sensation in her heart.

‘Chen Yu Bai,’ An Xiao Li called.

‘Um,’ Chen Yu Bai said but kept his eyes closed.

‘You could have just told me, you didn’t need to tell everyone like you did tonight,’ An Xiao Li said.

An Xiao Li avoided Chen Yu Bai’s wandering hands. She turned her body around and laid on top of his body with her head rested on his shoulder.

Chen Yu Bai still kept his eyes closed.

‘I know you’re shy,’ An Xiao Li said softly in Chen Yu Bai’s ear. She was lazy and laid motionless on his body. ‘In the past if I asked you to tell me how you felt toward me, you just threw me on the bed. It made me think you didn’t love me, but it was just you being shy.’ Her face glowed. ‘It’s like when I’m taking an exam, I need a supervisor at the exam venue to force myself to quickly finish my exam. Chen Yu Bai, you’re always shy!’

Finally Chen Yu Bai couldn’t control his feelings anymore and his face turned bright red. He didn’t say anything and kissed Xiao Li’s lips.

After a long time Chen Yu Bai and An Xiao Li stopped moving in the spa. She rested her limp body on his body. ‘Chen Yu Bai...’ He didn’t respond so she fiddled with his fingers. ‘Have I told you how I feel toward you before... I think, perhaps... I’m certain... I love you too...’ Her soft voice gradually faded and her body slid down his body. His body froze and his heart was deeply moved by her confession. He pulled her body up but he didn’t say anything because she was sound asleep.

Chen Yu Bai carried Xiao Li into his bedroom. He heard her call his name nonstop that whole night, whilst he was immersed in a strange state of bliss and sweet torment. He kept his head lowered and watched her sleep peacefully. A long time later the cool summer wind blew through the opened windows and fluttered the curtains, he wrapped an arm around her shoulder and realised what was happening to him.

What Chen Yu Bai felt was the desire to lovingly dote on Xiao Li. It was the kind of desire to dote that a man felt after loving a woman. He wanted to treat Xiao Li good forever.

Chen Yu Bai felt at peace and his lips were smiling in the dark night. He wiped off the drool on Xiao Li's face that was resting on his chest. He kissed Xiao Li's nose, drowsiness took over and he slept together with Xiao Li in the beautiful world.

End of Chapter Twenty-four

Related

part 1

Side Stories (Part 1)

Chen Yin Jiang was the head of the Chen household and Chen Yu Bai was Chen Yin Jiang's only son. Growing up as the next head of the Chen household, Chen Yu Bai had to go through a lot of struggles and he developed a cold temperament and rarely spoke.

Before Chen Yu Bai trusted and fell in love with Xiao Li, his aunt Chen Yin Ren was the only person he cared about and could relate to in the Chen household. That was why for a long period in Chen Yu Bai's life, he resented his country bumpkin and dummy 'cousin' Xiao Li.

After Chen Yin Ren cut ties with the Chen household and before Chen Yu Bai studied overseas, Chen Yu Bai travelled to Xiao Li's hometown. At that time Chen Yu Bai was still Chen's company's heir, if he stepped outside there was always a driver and a group of guards who followed him. Chen Yu Bai sat inside a luxury car and waited for Xiao Li to come out of her school.

When Chen Yu Bai visited Xiao Li's hometown that autumn, the students and teachers were on a semester break and the school was deserted. Chen Yu Bai's car was parked outside the school's field.

Chen Yu Bai remembered that autumn afternoon the sun shone golden light on the school, it was a beautiful sight. On the vast school field was a little girl, her hair was braided and she was learning to ride a bike. One glance, and he recognised it was Miss dummy that Chen Yin Ren brought to his family home before Chen Yin Ren left his family home.

Xiao Li at that age was a chubby country bumpkin, she rode a male's bike that reached her chest. She wore warm shoes that were about as big as her face. Her riding posture wasn't good and she kept fumbling to sit upright on the bike, she struggled to push the bike pedals and her right shoe flew off. Her bike swayed, she panicked and turned the bike around to look for her missing right shoe. Her hand slipped and she cried out before the bike and her body collided with the ground.

Chen Yu Bai called Miss Chen and Miss Chen rushed to the school field. The moment Miss Chen saw that Xiao Li ruined the town's only darling and beautiful bike, Miss Chen was furious.

The moment Xiao Li spotted Miss Chen, Xiao Li quickly rubbed her bottom and frantically crawled up from the ground. Xiao Li's clothes were covered in dirt, a shoe still missing on her right foot but she fled from the ruined bike and occasionally looked back to see if Miss Chen was chasing her or not. Chen Yu Bai saw Xiao Li's lips moving nonstop and he thought she must have asked the heavens to save her from Miss Chen's temper. Xiao Li's face was flushed red, it made her look more like a dummy.

Chen Yu Bai couldn't stop his lips from smiling so he covered his lips with his hand. He sat in his car and laughed loudly. At that time, from the moment he knew how to memorise things, there was never a moment he felt happy as he did in the car that day.

A few years later, Chen Yu Bai followed Liang Fei Fang back to Chen Yu Bai's childhood district to develop Liang's company. But Chen Yu Bai didn't have future plans on his mind, what he thought about was Xiao Li.

When Chen Yu Bai returned from overseas it was still unclear why he thought about Xiao Li, later he realised he had formed an attachment toward Xiao Li years ago and he had missed her whilst he was overseas.

The moment Chen Yu Bai landed and got off the plane, a background file about Xiao Li's life was quickly brought to him. He stroked the photo of Xiao Li smiling brightly, and he felt a 'finally' sensation pressed into his heart. His heart declared to Xiao Li's heart – 'Xiao Li, we have many long days and months ahead of us!'

After Chen Yu Bai got to eat Xiao Li's meat, he didn't have any special feelings in his heart. He considered himself as a bad person so moral righteousness never tied him down, he'd always been morally loose.

Accidentally or intentionally, but everything that happened to that point Chen Yu Bai ate Xiao Li's meat, he felt that everything laid within the palm of his hand. Then that hot morning on the way to a morning meeting, his assistant of six years reported his business schedule for the day before his assistant mentioned

about Xiao Li's graduation celebration. 'The bouquet of flowers that aren't in season were flew over this morning and her gift is wrapped. Do you want to have a candlelight dinner with her at Golden Age tonight?'

Chen Yu Bai suddenly pressed on the brakes and startled his assistant. 'Deliver the flowers and gift to Linda. Cancel the dinner tonight!'

'What?' Chen Yu Bai's assistant asked.

Chen Yu Bai's assistant was shocked, because he thought the flowers and gift was meant to be a surprise for his boss' secretary for her graduation ceremony. He thought that his boss had fallen for Miss An so he didn't understand why his boss wanted to be with Linda to vent his anger that quickly.

'Tell Linda to come to my place tonight and wait for me,' Chen Yu Bai said and strode into the meeting room.

Chen Yu Bai felt that he was the only one entitled to control his life. Xiao Li was a woman that he absolutely couldn't marry, how could he let her affect his mind?

Chen Yu Bai's logic sunk deeper and he understood what he needed to do, he decided to – retreat.

After work Chen Yu Bai drove home and the moment he stepped into his house, Linda rushed toward him. Linda's hair was wet and the fragrance after a shower enhanced her sexy body. She wore a white bathrobe and on her face was a sweet and fresh smile.

'It's been too long... too long before you remembered me!' Linda said. She attached her body to Chen Yu Bai's body like a koala. 'But the flowers are beautiful and the teddy bear is adorable!'

Linda took the initiative and put her red lips out, but Chen Yu Bai coldly turned away and avoided her lips. She pouted her lips and sulked. 'You're hateful!'

Chen Yu Bai's expression grew colder as time passed.

Since Chen Yu Bai decided not to attend Xiao Li's graduation ceremony, his heart felt confused. He thought about Miss dummy seeing his fifth brother with Qin Sang, and wondered if Miss dummy would frown and turn away. He also

wondered when Miss dummy was taking photos if she looked at her surroundings and searched for him, hoping he would show up in time?

‘What are you thinking about?’ Linda asked.

Linda realised that Chen Yu Bai had changed. The ice glacier’s eyes appeared to have lost a corner of coldness.

Chen Yu Bai’s phone alerted him that he received a text. He composed himself and took out his phone to look at the text, the wicked witch Qin Sang sent him a text photo of Miss dummy surrounded by drunk boys who had their arms around her shoulders, she was smiling too brightly for his liking and he felt frustrated the more he looked. The wicked witch Qin Sang also added a caption – ‘Gathering with young classmates.’

Chen Yu Bai slammed his phone shut and spoke in a tensed voice. ‘I’m taking a shower first.’

In the bathroom connected to Chen Yu Bai’s bedroom, he turned on the hot water. He saw the hot water sprayed down his stiff body muscles then he turned off the water and rushed outside, but Linda was still inside the guest bathroom. He went back to his bedroom, laid on the bed and he looked at the dark night sky outside the window, he felt confused.

When Xiao Li called Chen Yu Bai’s phone, within a split second he heard something crack in his heart, but later he felt comfortable and lighter.

‘Little Bai?’ An Xiao Li called.

Those two softly spoken words evaporated all of Chen Yu Bai’s internal struggles.

‘Wait for me,’ Chen Yu Bai said and hung up his phone.

Chen Yu Bai smiled and he quickly chose an outfit to wear from his cupboard. Then he went to knock on the guest bathroom and coldly told Linda he was leaving.

On the way to Xiao Li’s house, Chen Yu Bai called his assistant and he was mercilessly teased. ‘If Linda asks me what you’re not satisfied about her, what should I say?’

‘In this situation, do you need me to teach you what to say?’ Chen Yu Bai asked.

‘Then I’ll say that the young master Chen had finally accepted that he had found true love. So with the exception of his true love, he wants to end all inappropriate relations between a man and a woman,’ Chen Yu Bai’s assistant joked daringly once in a blue moon.

Chen Yu Bai didn’t argue with his assistant and hung up his phone.

Not everyone wanted to endure something with a heavy price like love and Chen Yu Bai felt he was someone who especially didn’t want to fall in love.

The longer Chen Yu Bai was together with Xiao Li, the more he felt that if he was Liang Fei Fang and Xiao Li was Gu Yan, perhaps he’d give up everything in the world in exchange for Xiao Li’s smile.

Amongst Chen Yu Bai’s sworn brothers, he was the first one to know that Gu Yan was Liang Fei Fang’s big disaster. Chen Yu Bai was also the first to recognise the strangeness between Rong Yan and his fourth brother. Li Wei Ran once asked Chen Yu Bai why he knew so soon, he replied the change in their tolerance threshold.

Chen Yu Bai felt that if a man willingly tolerated a girl outside their tolerance threshold, he was certain it was related to love.

So on a beautiful early morning when Miss dummy wrongly assumed that Chen Yu Bai was asleep, she softly fumbled for her phone but he didn’t open his eyes to stop her.

Xiao Li gently leaned close to Chen Yu Bai’s head and a soft flash sound was heard, it made him laugh on the inside. He heard her mumble something sweet and he smiled then he heard another flash and she laughed, because she thought she successfully took secret photos of them together.

Later Chen Yu Bai accidentally saw the photo Xiao Li took of them together in bed set as his caller ID on her phone. At that time she was watching TV, he quietly held her phone behind the sofa and he clearly heard something crashed into his heart.

When Chen Yu Bai was sixteen he made his first million yuan. Later Chen Yu Bai with Liang Fei Fang, they battled for Liang's company to have a bigger piece on the financial market but Chen Yu Bai never got a headache from facing fierce competition.

But when Chen Yu Bai was faced with the black and white piano keys, he sighed at least a dozen times a day.

Qin Sang told Chen Yu Bai in Xiao Li's hometown to give Xiao Li anything she wanted and at the bar Qin Sang was right about him being a love fool for Xiao Li.

So for Xiao Li, Chen Yu Bai rubbed his forehead and he called the piano teacher who had the trembling voice again. 'Can you teach how to play the same piano song again?'

By the time it was the banquet night Chen Yu Bai planned to perform a surprise piano song for Xiao Li, he still didn't master the piano song. He was frustrated and resorted to relying on his extraordinary memory to recall the piano key for each music note and forced his right hand to press the right piano key at the right time.

Chen Yu Bai admitted that Qin Sang understood Miss dummy the most, because the night he performed the piano song for Xiao Li was the night that he saw Xiao Li deeply moved the most since they were together.

The following morning after Chen Yu Bai's piano performance, Xiao Li promised she'd send-off Qin Sang at the airport. Xiao Li's apple alarm clock rang but Xiao Li rolled over onto his arm. He was sleepy too and pulled Xiao Li onto his chest, he stroked her smooth back and in his dream state he said to Xiao Li that it wouldn't matter if they didn't go to the airport because Qin Sang was going to return soon. Xiao Li heard what he said sounded reasonable so she weakly agreed, hugged his waist and went back to sleep. He hugged her tighter and went back to sleep too, but he clearly felt it was a tranquil and beautiful morning.

Chen Yu Bai asked himself if love had a thousand different types of love. In the past he felt love was too burdensome and wasn't something he wanted to carry on his shoulders. He was also sceptical if love actually exist. But during the

tranquil and beautiful morning he hugged Miss dummy and slept, he didn't care how the sky and ground outside changed. He only felt that after someone met the right person then it wasn't burdensome to willingly be a happily married person.

End of Side Stories (Part 1)

Related

part 2

Side Stories (Part 2 of 2)

The road to Xiao Li's hometown was being fixed and it was hard for cars to pass through the road to her hometown. But Chen Yu Bai was used to driving fast so even though the road was bumpy he still hit the accelerator hard. Both Chen Yu Bai's car and its passengers were bounced around and scared. Chen Yu Bai drove with one hand and the other hand braced the sleeping Xiao Li's seatbelt against her chest.

An Xiao Li was sleeping obliviously until she heard someone cried out from the backseat and woke up, it was little Bai's dad. She looked at the front mirror and saw that little Bai's dad was holding onto his shiny bald head and he looked angry.

An Xiao Li laughed softly at little Bai who she thought must have loved her too much and was willing to let his dad bump a shiny bald head in the car. She sneaked a glance at little Bai, he was glaring.

An Xiao Li thought she was laughing softly, but it made little Bai's parents' eyes look angrier.

An Xiao Li broke out in a cold sweat and quickly diverted little Bai's parents' attention. 'We're nearly... there.'

At An Xiao Li's family home, Miss Chen and An Bu San were already home waiting for Miss Chen's unwelcomed former family members... but Mr and Mrs Chen senior's expressions were more sour.

An Xiao Li's eyes were brimmed with tears and she turned to look at little Bai. He didn't look at her but reached for her hand and held tight.

Miss Chen waited twenty years for the day her former brother and sister-in-law would come crawling to her and ask for a favour.

Miss Chen saw her 'beloved' brother look frustrated as he walked into Miss Chen's home with his prim and proper wife. Miss Chen felt triumphant on the inside, because they came to beg her to let her daughter marry their son – beg

her!

Miss Chen lifted her chin. 'Sit.'

Little Bai's sour parents sat on the sofa in the living room. But the sofa was unwelcoming as Miss Chen, the sofa made a loud squeaky fart noise and made little Bai's sour parents jump up from the sofa. They glanced at each other and slowly sat back down on the unwelcoming sofa.

'Chen Yu Bai, go make tea!' Miss Chen ordered.

Miss Chen sat on the swivel chair happily. She was enjoyed ordering her dear nephew soon to be her dear son-in-law. She saw her daughter was about to stand up and follow Chen Yu Bai so she gave her daughter a warning glare. She raised her daughter well, because her daughter stayed sitting on the same spot.

'Big brother and big sister-in-law, long time no see. You're both still noble like in the past,' Miss Chen said and smiled politely.

Little Bai's parents exchanged a look for a while before little Bai's dad surrendered. 'Little Ren, with us you don't need to beat around the bush. For our children's sake, we should choose an auspicious day for them to marry. Yu Bai isn't young anymore, the sooner the better.'

'You're both satisfied with this daughter-in-law?' Miss Chen asked and laughed. 'That's strange, she's my daughter that I raised, you're both certain you like her?'

An Xiao Li looked at Miss Chen helplessly... she wasn't certain Miss Chen was her biological mum... wait, she forgot, Miss Chen was her step-mum... she covered her sad eyes.

'Little Li... she's a good girl... we... Yu Bai really loves her,' Little Bai's mum said.

'She's just a good girl?' Miss Chen asked in a serious tone. 'But to me, my daughter is too good for your son, it'll be hard for your son to match my wonderful daughter.'

An Xiao Li uncovered her sad eyes. An Bu San secretly pulled his wife's shirt but his wife glared at him so he looked in a different direction.

Mr and Mrs Chen senior both looked uncomfortable and kept their mouths

closed and didn't say anything else. When Chen Yin Ren wanted to marry An Bu San, the Chen household opposed and Mr and Mrs Chen senior who were the head of the Chen household were the ones that opposed strongly the most. In the end Miss Chen had no choice but to leave her family home. Miss Chen was the young arrogant mistress of the Chen household, but on her wedding day she didn't even have a wedding dress to wear. After Mr and Mrs Chen reminisced about how they treated Miss Chen in the past, they both felt that Miss Chen resented them.

Little Bai stood and poured tea for everyone. 'Dad and mum, come with me outside for a while. I have something I want to tell you.'

The moment little Bai and his parents left the living room, An Xiao Li jumped up and cried. 'Mum... later after I marry into their family, because of you my dad and mum-in-law will hate me... hoo hoo...'

An Bu San nodded his head. 'What happened to us was long ago, we shouldn't let it get in the way of our daughter and Yu Bai's happiness. The so-called...'

'Be quiet!' Miss Chen ordered her husband. She knocked her daughter's head. 'Dad and mum-in-law? That sounds too sweet coming from your mouth. If your mum doesn't show them that they can't mess with my daughter, later after you marry into their family you won't even dare to hope you can stay alive! I can't believe my husband and my daughter are siding with outsiders! You're both dummies! Big dummy and little dummy!'

The big dummy and little dummy wisely closed their mouths.

Little Bai and his parents returned to the living room, he was still his cold self but his parents looked like caught chickens. His parents were trembling and their four eyes were like x-ray eyes, because they stared intensely at An Xiao Li's stomach.

An Xiao Li's heart ached, she had a revelation – little Bai's parents didn't like her because her slightly bloated stomach repulsed them.

'Little Ren,' Chen Yin Jiang called sincerely. 'What happened that year, I was the one in the wrong. I shouldn't have discriminated your husband for being poor and wanted you to marry someone who was rich and an asset to the family business. I heartlessly turned my back on you. It's me your older brother who

was wrong, I'm sorry. It was me who had bad eyesight. Your daughter is very good, we do really like her, Yu Bai... his temperament is a little poor, I hope you and... my younger brother-in-law won't hold it against him.'

It was incredibly hard for Chen Yin Jiang to say those words, but Chen Yin Ren was happy to hear those words and it put her in a good mood. Chen Yin Ren wanted to cause her high and mighty older brother more discomfort, but Chen Yu Bai spoke before her. 'Aunt, giving your blessing is good enough.'

Miss Chen coughed awkwardly and glared at her precious nephew. She pouted her lips and lifted her chin. 'Of course we won't hold it against our son-in-law – they can get engaged first, there's no rush to have a quick wedding, they can slowly plan the wedding.'

Chen Yin Jiang panicked. 'How can they slowly plan a wedding? If they don't marry, stomach...'

'Dad!' Chen Yu Bai cried out. 'Listen to aunt. Xiao Li and I will get engaged first, it won't be too late if we marry a month after our engagement.'

The four elders in the room began to argue about the wedding dowry so Chen Yu Bai dragged Miss dummy outside to the balcony to get fresh air.

On the balcony, little Bai hugged An Xiao Li tight. 'What did you say to your parents? Why did they suddenly admitted their faults and apologised to Miss Chen?'

'I told them what they wanted to hear,' Chen Yu Bai said and smiled. 'Like they're about to have a grandchild.'

An Xiao Li understood what trick little Bai used to persuade his parents and she immediately protested. 'That was my idea first! You said we couldn't use it! Chen Yu Bai, you stole my suggestion!'

An Xiao Li was certain that Miss Chen wouldn't let little Bai's parents off the hook easily so An Xiao Li rushed over to little Bai's house and suggested that he knocked her up, if his baby was in her belly then Miss Chen wouldn't hesitate to forgive and forget.

But little Bai clearly extinguished An Xiao Li's suggestion!

An Xiao Li felt that she found little Bai's weakness, she grabbed hold of it and didn't want to let it go. She tried to force him to admit she was smart, but his icy glare scared her and she quietly rested her body against his body.

'I'm busy planning our wedding. There's not a lot of time until our wedding so I tricked them,' Chen Yu Bai said. He hugged Xiao Li's waist tight. 'Before we get married, I won't get you pregnant.'

'Why?' An Xiao Li asked.

Xiao Li tilted her head back and looked up at Chen Yu Bai lovingly, in her eyes was just him. His heart softened like the soft and gentle wind. 'Because...' He leaned down and kissed her. 'In this lifetime, I'm only marrying you.'

Chen Yu Bai wanted to plan the most perfect wedding in the world for Xiao Li – only for Xiao Li, only Xiao Li was deserving, even the child Xiao Li would give birth for him wasn't allowed to share Xiao Li's spotlight on their wedding day.

Xiao Li was Chen Yu Bai's little dummy, she'd never know how much he loved her.

End of Side Stories (Part 2 of 2)

The End of Go With The Flow Of Love.

Related